





Bible T. T. Campbell, England, 1871

187

THE
FOUR GOSPELS
IN ONE.

ACCORDING TO THE AUTHORIZED VERSION.

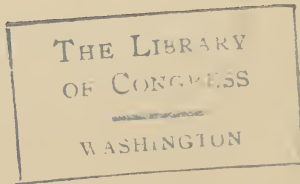


BY
R. A. Campbell
A CHICAGO BIBLE CLASS TEACHER.

CHICAGO.
R. A. CAMPBELL, PUBLISHER.
1871.

BT249
C3
1871

Entered, according to Act of Congress, in the year 1871,
By R. A. CAMPBELL,
In the Office of the Librarian of Congress, at Washington.



ELECTROTYPED BY
SHNIEDEWEND & LEE,
114 Madison St.,
CHICAGO.

PREFACE.

By way of Preface the author wishes simply to state the plan upon which he has prepared this work and the principles that have governed his labors.

He has no pet theories to establish, but has an ardent desire that the life and doctrines of our Saviour shall be better and more generally understood, and has faithfully endeavored :

To embody in this work every statement of fact in the four gospels, neither adding nor diminishing in any particular ;

To employ exactly the language of the authorized version, even at the expense of elegance of expression, and without comment ;

To divide the work into sections, the headings of which shall note the central thought of each , to locate as far as possible the incident, and to give the exact chapter and verses that make up the section ;

To arrange the narrative in the chronological order in which it probably occurred. As upon this there is sometimes doubt, so there must be differences of opinion. That order has been adopted which, after careful investigation, proved certain, or seemed most probable.

With these few words of introduction, the author submits the book, hoping the execution of the work may in some measure deserve the commendation already bestowed upon the plan.

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

Preface, - - - - -	3
Index to Verses, - - - - -	14

SYNOPSIS OF THE GOSPELS.

CHAPTER I.

ANNOUNCEMENT, BIRTH AND CHILDHOOD OF JESUS.

Sec.	Subject.	Page.
1.—	Preface to Luke's Gospel, - - - - -	17
2.—	Introduction to John's Gospel, - - - - -	17
3.—	Genealogies of Jesus, - - - - -	18
4.—	Birth of John the Baptist Announced, - - - - -	21
5.—	Birth of Jesus Announced to Mary, - - - - -	22
6.—	Mary visits Elizabeth, - - - - -	23
7.—	Birth of John the Baptist, - - - - -	25
8.—	Birth of Jesus Announced to Joseph, - - - - -	26
9.—	Birth of Jesus, - - - - -	27
10.—	An Angel appears to the Shepherds. The Shepherds visit Jesus, - - - - -	28
11.—	Circumcision of Jesus, - - - - -	29
12.—	Presentation of Jesus in the Temple, - - - - -	29
13.—	Temporary Return to Nazareth, - - - - -	30
14.—	Visit of the Magi, - - - - -	31
15.—	Flight into Egypt, - - - - -	32
16.—	Massacre of the Children, - - - - -	32

Sec.	Subject.	Page.
17.—	The Return from Egypt, - - -	33
18.—	Jesus at 12 years of age visits Jerusalem, -	33
19.—	Jesus Dwells at Nazareth, - - -	34

CHAPTER II.

THE ANNOUNCEMENT AND INTRODUCTION OF CHRIST'S PUBLIC MINISTRY.

20.—	The Ministry of John the Baptist, - - -	35
21.—	The Baptism of Jesus, - - - -	37
22.—	The Temptation, - - - - -	38
23.—	John the Baptist's Testimony concerning Jesus,	39
24.—	Jesus Gains his First Disciples, - - -	41
25.—	Jesus' First Miracle, - - - -	42
26.—	Jesus visits Capernaum, - - - -	43

CHAPTER III.

FROM THE FIRST PASSOVER DURING CHRIST'S PUBLIC MINISTRY UNTIL THE SECOND.

27.—	The Traders Expelled from the Temple, -	45
28.—	Nicodemus visits Jesus, - - - -	46
29.—	Jesus Retires to Judea, - - - -	48
30.—	Final Testimony of John the Baptist, - -	48
31.—	John the Baptist in Prison, - - - -	49
32.—	Jesus and the Samaritan Woman, - - -	49
33.—	Jesus Teaches Publicly in Galilee, - -	52
34.—	Jesus Heals the Nobleman's Son at Capernaum,	53
35.—	Jesus Rejected at Nazareth, - - - -	53
36.—	Jesus Resides at Capernaum, - - - -	55
37.—	Jesus Calls Peter, Andrew, James and John,	55
38.—	A Demoniac in the Synagogue Healed, - -	56
39.—	Peter's Wife's Mother Healed, - - -	57
40.—	Jesus makes his First Tour through Galilee, -	57
41.—	The Miraculous Draught of Fishes, - -	58
42.—	The Sermon on the Mount, - - - -	59
43.—	A Leper Healed, - - - - -	69
44.—	Jesus Returns to Capernaum and Heals a Paralytic, - - - - -	69

Sec.	Subject.	Page.
45.—	Jesus Calls Matthew, - - - -	71
46.—	Jesus Attends Matthew's Feast. Eats with Publicans and Sinners. Discourses upon Fasting, . - .	71
47.—	Jesus Raises Jairus' Daughter. Heals the Woman with an Issue of Blood, -	73
48.—	Two Blind Men Healed, - - - -	75
49.—	A Dumb Spirit Cast Out, - - - -	75

CHAPTER IV.

FROM THE SECOND PASSEVER DURING CHRIST'S PUBLIC
MINISTRY UNTIL THE THIRD.

50.—	Jesus Attends the Passover, Heals an Impotent Man on the Sabbath, -	77
51.—	The Jews Persecute Jesus. He Vindicates his Work. Announces Himself as the Son of God, -	78
52.—	The Disciples Pluck Ears of Grain on the Sabbath,	81
53.—	Jesus Heals a Withered Hand on the Sabbath,	81
54.—	Jesus Heals many at the Sea of Galilee, -	82
55.—	Jesus Continues all night in Prayer. Selects Twelve Disciples, - - -	83
56.—	Sermon on the Plain, - - - -	84
57.—	The Centurion's Servant Healed, - - -	87
58.—	Jesus Raises a Widow's Son, - - -	88
59.—	John the Baptist in Prison. Sends two of his Disciples to Jesus, - -	89
60.—	Jesus Denounces the Unbelieving Cities. Invites All, promising an Easy Yoke and a Light Burden, - - - -	91
61.—	Jesus is Anointed by a Penitent Woman, -	92
62.—	Jesus makes a Second Circuit in Galilee, -	93
63.—	The Blind and Dumb Demoniac Healed. "He hath Beelzebub." Of Blasphemy. The Tree is known by his Fruit, - -	93
64.—	The Scribes and Pharisees Seek a Sign, -	95

Sec.	Subject.	Page.
65.—	Christ's Mother and Brethren, - - -	96
66.—	Parable of the Sower, - - -	97
67.—	Parables spoken to the Multitude, - -	99
68.—	Jesus Explains the Tares and speaks other Parables to his Disciples, - - -	101
69.—	The Tempest Stilled, - - -	103
70.—	The two Demoniacs of Gadara Healed. Herd of Swine Destroyed, - - -	104
71.—	Jesus Re-visits Nazareth and is again Rejected,	106
72.—	The Third Circuit in Galilee, - - -	107
73.—	The Twelve Instructed and Sent Forth, -	107
74.—	Herod's Opinion of Jesus, - - -	110
75.—	The Twelve Return. The Five Thousand Fed, - - -	112
76.—	Jesus Walks on the Water, - - -	114
77.—	Jesus Teaches in the Synagogue at Capernaum,	116

CHAPTER V.

FROM THE THIRD PASSOVER DURING CHRIST'S PUBLIC MINISTRY UNTIL THE ENSUING FEAST OF TABERNACLES.

78.—	Jesus Continues in Galilee, - - -	121
79.—	Of Unwashed Hands. Traditions of the Elders, - - -	121
80.—	Daughter of the Syro-Phenician Woman Healed,	123
81.—	A Deaf and Dumb Man Healed, - - -	124
82.—	Four Thousand Fed, - - -	125
83.—	The Pharisees and Sadducees Again Require a Sign, - - -	126
84.—	Warning Against the Leaven of the Pharisees,	127
85.—	Jesus Heals a Blind Man, - - -	128
86.—	Peter Professes that Jesus is the Christ, -	128
87.—	Jesus Foretells his Death and Resurrection. Teaches Self-denial, - - -	129
88.—	The Transfiguration, - - -	130
89.—	Jesus Heals the Demoniac Boy, - - -	132
90.—	Jesus again Foretells his Death and Resurrection,	133

Sec.	Subject.	Page.
91.—	Miracle to provide Tribute Money, - - - - -	134
92.—	The Disciples Dispute who shall be Greatest.	
	Jesus Answers, - - - - -	134
93.—	How to Deal with an Offending Brother.	
	Power of United Prayer.	
	Parable of the Unforgiving Servant, - - -	137
94.—	Jesus Rejected by a Samaritan Village, - - -	138
95.—	Requirements of Discipleship, - - - - -	139

CHAPTER VI.

FROM THE FEAST OF TABERNACLES TILL CHRIST'S ARRIVAL
AT BETHANY.

96.—	Jesus Teaches in the Temple at the Feast of Tabernacles, - - - - -	141
97.—	The Woman Taken in Adultery, - - - - -	144
98.—	The Jews Attempt to Stone Jesus, - - - - -	145
99.—	The Seventy Sent Forth, - - - - -	148
100.—	The Seventy Return, - - - - -	149
101.—	Parable of the Good Samaritan, - - - - -	150
102.—	Jesus at the House of Martha and Mary, - - -	151
103.—	Jesus Teaches How to Pray, - - - - -	152
104.—	Jesus Heals a Demoniac, - - - - -	153
105.—	Jesus Dines with a Pharisee.	
	Pronounces Woes against Scribes and Pharisees,	155
106.—	Jesus Discourses upon Hypocrisy and Worldliness,	157
107.—	Slaughter of certain Galileans.	
	Parable of the Barren Fig Tree, - - - - -	161
108.—	A Man Born Blind Healed on the Sabbath,	162
109.—	Jesus at the Festival of the Dedication.	
	He Retires to Bethabara, Beyond Jordan, - - -	166
110.—	Jesus Heals an Infirm Woman on the Sabbath,	168
111.—	Jesus is Warned Against Herod, - - - - -	169
112.—	Jesus Hears of Lazarus' Sickness, - - - - -	170
113.—	Jesus Dines with a Chief Pharisee on the Sabbath.	
	Heals a Man with Dropsy.	
	Parable of the Great Supper, - - - - -	171
114.—	What is Required of Christ's Disciples, - - -	173

Sec.	Subject.	Page.
115.—	Parables and Teachings, - - -	174
116.—	Lazarus Raised from the Dead, - -	180
117.—	Council of the Chief Priests and Pharisees to put Jesus to Death.	
	He Departs from Jerusalem to Ephraim,	183
118.—	Ten Lepers Cleansed, - - -	183
119.—	The Coming of Christ's Kingdom, - -	184
120.—	Parables—The Importunate Widow.	
	The Pharisee and Publican, - - -	185
121.—	Jesus' Final Departure from Galilee.	
	Concerning Divorce, - - -	186
122.—	Jesus Blesses Little Children, - - -	188
123.—	The Rich Young Ruler.	
	Discourse upon Riches, - - -	188
124.—	The Parable of the Laborers in the Vineyard,	190
125.—	Jesus the Third time Foretells his Death and Resurrection, - - -	191
126.—	Ambitious Request of James and John, - -	192
127.—	Jesus Heals Two Blind Men near Jericho, -	193
128.—	Jesus Visits Zaccheus, - - -	194
129.—	Many Seek Jesus at Jerusalem, - - -	196
130.—	Jesus at Bethany, - - -	196

CHAPTER VII.

THE FIRST FIVE DAYS OF THE FOURTH AND LAST PASSEOVER WEEK DURING CHRIST'S PUBLIC MINISTRY.

131.—	Jesus Enters Jerusalem Publicly - - -	197
132.—	Certain Greeks Desire to See Jesus.	
	He Retires to Bethany to Lodge, - - -	200
133.—	Jesus Curses a Barren Fig Tree, - - -	201
134.—	Traders and Money Changers Expelled from the Temple, - - -	201
135.—	The Withered Fig Tree, - - -	203
136.—	Christ's Authority Questioned, - - -	203
137.—	Parable of the Two Sons, - - -	204
138.—	Parable of the Wicked Husbandmen, - -	205
139.—	Parable of the Marriage of the King's Son, -	206

Sec.	Subject.	Page.
140.—	Concerning Tribute to Cæsar, - -	207
141.—	Of Marriage in the Resurrection, - -	208
142.—	The Great Commandment, - - -	209
143.—	How is Christ the Son of David, - -	210
144.—	Warnings Against the Scribes and Pharisees,	211
145.—	Woes Against the Scribes and Pharisees, -	212
146.—	Lamentation Over Jerusalem, - - -	214
147.—	The Widow's Mite, - - - -	214
148.—	Reflections on the Unbelief of the Jews, -	215
149.—	Jesus Foretells the Destruction of the Temple,	216
150.—	Jesus Foretells the Coming of False Christs.	
	The Persecution of his Disciples.	
	Describes his Second Coming, - -	216
151.—	Jesus Enforces Watchful Preparation, - -	220
152.—	Jesus Teaches to Watch, Work, and Pray.	
	Parables of the Ten Virgins and the Talents,	222
153.—	Scene of the Final Judgment, - -	224
154.—	Jesus Announces his Betrayal and Crucifixion, -	225
155.—	The Jewish Rulers Conspire Against Christ,	226
156.—	Jesus Sups at Bethany.	
	Mary Anoints Him, - - - -	226
157.—	Judas Engages to Betray Jesus, - - -	227
158.—	Preparation for the Passover, - - -	228

CHAPTER VIII.

THE PASSOVER MEAL AND INSTITUTION OF THE
LORD'S SUPPER.

159.—	Beginning of the Passover Meal, - - -	229
160.—	Contention Among the Twelve, - - -	229
161.—	Jesus Washes the Disciples' Feet, - - -	230
162.—	Jesus Foretells his Betrayal, and Points Out the Traitor.	
	Judas Withdraws, - - - -	232
163.—	Jesus Foretells Peter's Denial, - - -	233
164.—	Jesus Institutes the Lord's Supper, - - -	234
165.—	Jesus Promises the Comforter, - - -	235
166.—	Christ the True Vine, - - - -	237

Sec.	Subject.	Page.
167.	Jesus Warns his Disciples of Persecution. Promises the Holy Spirit.	
	Prayer in Christ's Name, - - - -	239
168.	Christ's Last Prayer with his Disciples, -	242

CHAPTER IX.

CHRIST'S BETRAYAL, ARREST, TRIAL AND CRUCIFIXION.

169.	Peter's Denial again Foretold, - - -	245
170.	Christ's Agony in Gethsemane, - - -	246
171.	Jesus Betrayed and Made Prisoner, - - -	247
172.	Christ Before Annas, - - - -	249
173.	Peter's Denial, - - - -	249
174.	Christ Before Caiaphas, - - - -	251
175.	Jesus Condemned by the Sanhedrim, - - -	253
176.	Judas Repents and Hangs Himself, - - -	254
177.	Jesus Led Away to Pilate, - - - -	254
178.	Jesus Before Herod, - - - -	256
179.	Pilate Seeks to Release Jesus. The Jews Demand Barabbas, - - -	257
180.	Jesus Scourged, Mocked and Delivered for Crucifixion, - - - -	259
181.	Jesus Led to Crucifixion, - - - -	260
182.	The Crucifixion, - - - -	261
183.	Jesus Mocked on the Cross, He Commends his Mother to John, - - -	262
184.	Jesus Expires on the Cross. Wonderful Phenomena, - - - -	263
185.	The Body of Jesus taken down from the Cross and Buried, - - - -	265
186.	The Sepulchre Sealed and Guarded, - - -	267

CHAPTER X.

CHRIST'S RESURRECTION, HIS SUBSEQUENT APPEARANCES AND ASCENSION

187.	The Resurrection, - - - -	269
188.	The Women Visit the Sepulchre. Mary Magdalene Hastily Returns, - - -	269

Sec.	Subject.	Page.
189.—	The Women Enter the Sepulchre and see the Angels, - - - - -	270
190.—	Peter and John at the Sepulchre, - - -	271
191.—	Jesus Appears to Mary Magdalene, - - -	272
192.—	Jesus Meets the other Women, - - -	272
193.—	The Women Report to the Disciples that they have seen Jesus, - - - - -	273
194.—	Report of the Watch, - - - - -	273
195.—	Jesus is Seen by Peter. By Two Disciples on the Way to Emmaus, -	274
196.—	Jesus Appears to the Apostles. Thomas Absent, - - - - -	276
197.—	Eight Days Later Jesus Again Appears to the Apostles. Thomas Present, - - - - -	277
198.—	Jesus Appears to Seven Disciples at the Sea of Galilee, - - - - -	278
199.—	Jesus Meets Five Hundred on a Mountain in Galilee. The Last Commission, - - - - -	280
200.—	He is Seen of James and of all the Apostles,	281
201.—	The Ascension, - - - - -	282
202.—	Conclusion of John's Gospel, - - - - -	282

INDEX OF VERSES.

SHOWING THE LOCATION IN THIS WORK OF EVERY VERSE
IN THE FOUR GOSPELS.

MATTHEW.

Chap.	Verses.	Sec.	Chap.	Verses.	Sec.	Chap.	Verses.	Sec.
1....	1-17....	3	13....	1-23....	66	23....	13-36....	145
	18-25....	8		24-35....	67		37-39....	146
	25....	11		36-53....	68	24....	1-2 ..	149
2....	1-12....	14		54-58....	71		3-31... 150	
	13-15....	15	14....	1-12....	74		32-51....	151
	16-18....	16		13-21....	75	25....	1-30....	152
	19-23....	17		22-36....	76		31-46....	153
3....	1-12....	20	15....	1-20....	79	26....	1-2	154
	13-17....	21		21-28....	80		3-5	155
4....	1-11....	22		29-31....	81		6-13....	156
	12	32		32-39....	82		14-16....	157
	13-16....	36		39	83		17-19....	158
	17	33	16....	1-4	83		20	159
	18-22....	37		4-12....	84		21-25....	162
	23-25....	40		13-20....	86		26-29....	164
5....	1-48....	42		21-28....	87		30	168
6....	1-34....	42	17....	1-13....	88		30-35....	169
7....	1-29....	42		14-21....	89		36-46....	170
8....	1-4	43		22-23....	90		47-56... 171	
	5-13....	57		24-27....	91		57	174
	14-17....	39	18....	1-14... 92			58	173
	18	69		15-35....	93		59-68....	174
	19-22....	95	19....	1-12....	121		69-75....	173
	23-27....	69		13-15....	122	27... 1	... 175	
	28-34....	70		16-30....	123		2	177
9....	1	70	20....	1-16....	124		3-10....	176
	2-8	44		17-19....	125		11-14....	177
	9	45		20-28....	126		15-26....	179
	10-17....	46		29-34....	127		26-30....	180
	18-26....	47	21....	1-11....	131		31-34....	181
	27-31....	48		12-16....	134		35-38....	182
	32-34....	49		17	132		39-44....	183
	35-38....	72		18-19....	133		45-56....	184
10....	1-42....	73		20-22....	135		57-61....	185
11....	1	73		23-27....	136		62-66....	186
	2-19....	59		28-32....	137	28....	1	188
	20-30....	60		33-46....	138		2-4	187
12....	1-8	52	22....	1-14....	139		5-8	188
	9-14....	53		15-22....	140		9-10....	192
	15-21....	54		23-33....	141		11-15....	194
	22-37....	63		34-40....	142		16	198
	38-45....	64		41-46....	143		16-20....	199
	46-50....	65	23....	1-12....	144			

MARK.

Chap.	Verses.	Sec.	Chap.	Verses.	Sec.	Chap.	Verses.	Sec.
1....	1-8	20	8....	10-12....	83	14....	1	154
	9-11....	21		13-21....	84		1-2	155
	12-13....	22		22-26....	85		3-9	156
	14	32		27-30....	86		10-11....	157
	14-15 ..	33		31-38....	87		12-16....	158
	16-20....	37	9....	1	87		17	159
	21-28....	38		2-13....	88		18-21....	162
	29-34....	39		14-29....	89		22-25....	164
	35-39....	40		30-32....	90		26	168
	40-45....	43		33	91		26-31....	169
2....	1-12....	44		33-50....	92		32-42....	170
	13-14....	45	10....	1-12....	121		43-52....	171
	15-22....	46		13-16....	122		53	174
	23-28....	52		17-31....	123		54	173
3....	1-6	53		32-34....	125		55-65....	174
	7-12....	54		35-45....	126		66-72....	173
	13-19....	55		46-52....	127	15....	1	175
	19-30....	63	11....	1-11....	131		1-5	177
	31-35..	65		11	132		6-15....	179
4....	1-25....	66		12-14....	133		15-19....	180
	26-34....	67		15-19....	134		20-23....	181
	35-41....	69		20-26....	135		24-28....	182
5....	1-21....	70		27-33....	136		29-32....	183
	22-43....	47	12....	1-12....	138		33-41....	184
6....	1-6	71		13-17....	140		42-47....	185
	6	72		18-27....	141	16....	1-4	188
	7-13....	73		28-34....	142		5-8	189
	14-29....	74		35-37 ..	143		9	191
	30-44....	75		38-39....	144		10-11....	193
	45-50....	76		40	145		12-13....	195
7 ...	1-23....	79		41-44....	147		14	196
	24-30....	80	13....	1-2	149		15-18....	199
	31-37....	81		3-27....	150		19-20....	201
8....	1-9	82		28-37....	151			

LUKE.

1....	1-4	1	4....	1-13....	22	7....	1-10....	57
	5-25....	4		14	32		11-17....	58
	26-38....	5		14-15....	33		18-35....	59
	39-56....	6		16-30....	35		36-50....	61
	57-80....	7		31	36	8....	1-3	62
2....	1-7	9		31-37....	38		4-18....	66
	8-20....	10		38-41....	39		19-21....	65
	21	11		42-44....	40		22-25....	69
	22-38....	12	5....	1-11....	41		26-40....	70
	39	13		12-16....	43		41-56....	47
	40	17		17-26....	44	9....	1-6	73
	41-50....	18		27-28....	45		7-9	74
	51-52....	19		29-39....	46		10-17....	75
3....	1-18....	20	6....	1-5	52		18-21....	86
	19-20....	31		6-11....	53		22-27....	87
	21-23. .	21		12-16....	55		28-36....	88
	23-33....	3		17-49....	56		37-43 ...	89

LUKE—CON.

Chap.	Verses.	Sec.
9....	43-45....	90
	46-50....	92
	51-56....	94
	57-62....	95
10....	1-16....	99
	17-24....	100
	25-37....	101
	38-42....	102
11....	1-13....	103
	14-36....	104
	37-54....	105
12....	1-59....	106
13....	1-9....	107
	10-21....	110
	22-35....	111
14....	1-24....	113
	25-35....	114
15....	1-32....	115
16....	1-31....	115
17....	1-10....	115
	11-19....	118
	20-37....	119
18....	1-14....	120
	15-17....	122
	18-30....	123
	31-34....	125

Chap.	Verses.	Sec.
18....	35-43....	127
19....	1-28....	128
	29-44....	131
	45-48....	134
20....	1-8....	136
	9-19....	138
	20-26....	140
	27-40....	141
	41-44....	143
	45-46....	144
	47....	145
21....	1-4....	147
	5-6....	149
	7-28....	150
	29-36....	151
	37-38....	134
22....	1....	154
	2....	155
	3-6....	157
	7-13....	158
	14-18....	159
	19-20....	164
	21-23....	162
	24-30....	160
	31-38....	163
	39....	168

Chap.	Verses.	Sec.
22....	39....	169
	40-46....	170
	47-53....	171
	54....	174
	55-62....	173
	63-65....	174
	66-71....	175
23....	1-5....	177
	6-12....	178
	13-25....	179
	25....	180
	26-33....	181
	33-34....	182
	35-37....	183
	38....	182
	39-43....	183
	44-49....	184
	50-56....	185
24....	1-2....	188
	3-8....	189
	9-11....	193
	12....	190
	13-35....	195
	36-49....	196
	50-53....	201

JOHN.

1 ..	1-14....	2
	15-32....	23
	32....	21
	32-34....	23
	35-51....	24
2....	1-11....	25
	12....	26
	13-25....	27
3....	1-21....	28
	22-24....	29
	25-30....	30
4....	1-42....	32
	43-45....	33
	46-54....	34
5....	1-14....	50
	15-47....	51
6....	1-14....	75
	15-21....	76
	22-71....	77
7....	1....	78
	2-10....	94
	11-53....	96
8....	1....	96
	2-11....	97

8....	12-59....	98
9....	1-41....	108
10....	1-21....	108
	22-42....	109
11....	1-6....	112
	7-46....	116
	47-54....	117
	55-57....	129
12....	1....	130
	2-8....	156
	9-11....	130
	12-19....	131
	20-36....	132
	37-50....	148
13 ..	1-20....	161
	21-30....	162
	31-38....	163
14....	1-31....	165
15....	1-27....	166
16 ..	1-33....	167
17....	1-26....	168
18 ..	1....	168
	1....	169
	1....	170

18....	2-11....	171
	12-14....	172
	15-18....	173
	19-23....	172
	24....	174
	25-27....	173
	28-38....	177
	39-40....	179
19....	1-16....	186
	16-17....	181
	18-24....	182
	25-27....	183
	28-30....	184
	31-42....	185
20....	1-2....	188
	3-10....	190
	11-17....	191
	18....	193
	19-25....	196
	26-29....	197
	30-31....	202
21....	1-23....	198
	24-25....	202

CHAPTER I.

ANNOUNCEMENT, BIRTH AND CHILDHOOD OF JESUS.

Occupying Thirteen and One-half Years.

§ 1. PREFACE TO LUKE'S GOSPEL.

Luke 1:1-4.

Forasmuch as many have taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration of those things which are most surely believed among us, even as they delivered them unto us, which from the beginning were eye-witnesses, and ministers of the word; it seemed good to me also, having had perfect understanding of all things from the very first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus, that thou mightest know the certainty of those things wherein thou hast been instructed.

§ 2. INTRODUCTION TO JOHN'S GOSPEL.

John 1:1-14.

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made. In him was life; and the life was the

light of men. And the light shineth in darkness;* and the darkness comprehended it not.

There was a man sent from God, whose name *was* John. The same came for a witness, to bear witness of the Light, that all *men* through him might believe. He was not that Light, but *was sent* to bear witness of that Light. *That* was the true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world. He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not. He came unto his own, and his own received him not. But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, *even* to them that believe on his name: which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.

§ 3. GENEALOGIES OF JESUS; MATTHEW PRESENTING
THE PEDIGREE OF JOSEPH, WHILE LUKE
GIVES THAT OF MARY.

Matt. 1:1-17. Luke 3:23-38.

The book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham.

Abraham begat Isaac;	And Jesus being (as
and Isaac begat Jacob;	was supposed) the son of
and Jacob begat Judas	Joseph, which was <i>the son</i>
and his brethren; and	of Heli, which was <i>the son</i>
Judas begat Phares and	of Matthat, which was <i>the</i>
Zara of Thamar; and	<i>son</i> of Levi, which was <i>the</i>
Phares begat Esrom; and	<i>son</i> of Melchi, which was
	<i>the son</i> of Janna, which

Esrom begat Aram; and Aram begat Aminadab; and Aminadab begat Naasson; and Naasson begat Salmon; and Salmon begat Booz of Rachab; and Booz begat Obed of Ruth; and Obed begat Jesse; and Jesse begat David the king; and David the king begat Solomon of her *that had been the wife* of Urias; and Solomon begat Roboam; and Roboam begat Abia; and Abia begat Asa; and Asa begat Josaphat; and Josaphat begat Joram; and Joram begat Ozias; and Ozias begat Joatham; and Joatham begat Achaz; and Achaz begat Ezekias; and Ezekias begat Manasses; and Manasses begat Amon; and Amon begat Josias; and Josias begat Jechonias and his brethren, about the time they were carried away to Babylon: and after they were brought to Babylon, Jechonias begat Salathiel;

was *the son* of Joseph, which was *the son* of Matathias, which was *the son* of Amos, which was *the son* of Naum, which was *the son* of Esli, which was *the son* of Nagge, which was *the son* of Maath, which was *the son* of Mattathias, which was *the son* of Semei, which was *the son* of Joseph, which was *the son* of Juda, which was *the son* of Joanna, which was *the son* of Rhesa, which was *the son* of Zorobabel, which was *the son* of Salathiel, which was *the son* of Neri, which was *the son* of Melchi, which was *the son* of Addi, which was *the son* of Cosam, which was *the son* of Elmodam, which was *the son* of Er, which was *the son* of Jose, which was *the son* of Eliezer, which was *the son* of Jorim, which was *the son* of Matthat, which was *the son* of Levi, which was *the son* of Simeon, which was *the son* of Juda, which was *the son* of Joseph, which was *the son* of Jonan, which was *the son* of Eliakim, which was *the son* of Melea,

and Salathiel begat Zorobabel; and Zorobabel begat Abiud; and Abiud begat Eliakim, and Eliakim begat Azor; and Azor begat Sadoc; and Sadoc begat Achim; and Achim begat Eliud; and Eliud begat Eleazar; and Eleazar begat Matthan; and Matthan begat Jacob; and Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ.

which was *the son* of Menan, which was *the son* of Mattatha, which was *the son* of Nathan, which was *the son* of David, which was *the son* of Jesse, which was *the son* of Obed, which was *the son* of Booz, which was *the son* of Salmon, which was *the son* of Naasson, which was *the son* of Aminadab, which was *the son* of Aram, which was *the son* of Esrom, which was *the son* of Phares, which was *the son* of Juda, which was *the son* of Jacob, which was *the son*

of Isaac, which was *the son* of Abraham, which was *the son* of Thara, which was *the son* of Nachor, which was *the son* of Saruch, which was *the son* of Ragau, which was *the son* of Phalec, which was *the son* of Heber, which was *the son* of Sala, which was *the son* of Cainan, which was *the son* of Arphaxad, which was *the son* of Sem, which was *the son* of Noe, which was *the son* of Lamech, which was *the son* of Mathusala, which was *the son* of Enoch, which was *the son* of Jared, which was *the son* of Maleleel, which was *the son* of Cainan, which was *the son* of Enos, which was *the son* of Seth, which was *the son* of Adam, which was *the son* of God.

So all the generations from Abraham to David *are* fourteen generations; and from David until the carrying away into Babylon *are* fourteen generations; and

from the carrying away into Babylon unto Christ *are* fourteen generations.

§ 4. THE ANGEL GABRIEL ANNOUNCES TO ZACHARIAS,
IN THE TEMPLE AT JERUSALEM, THE BIRTH
OF JOHN THE BAPTIST.

Luke 1:5-25.

There was in the days of Herod the king of Judea, a certain priest named Zacharias, of the course of Abia: and his wife *was* of the daughters of Aaron, and her name *was* Elisabeth. And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless. And they had no child, because that Elisabeth was barren; and they both were *now* well stricken in years.

And it came to pass, that, while he executed the priest's office before God in the order of his course, according to the custom of the priest's office, his lot was to burn incense when he went into the temple of the Lord. And the whole multitude of the people were praying without, at the time of incense.

And there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord, standing on the right side of the altar of incense. And when Zacharias saw *him*, he was troubled, and fear fell upon him. But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias: for thy prayer is heard; and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John. And thou shalt have joy and gladness, and many shall rejoice at his birth. For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink; and he shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb. And

many of the children of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their God. And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just; to make ready a people prepared for the Lord.

And Zacharias said unto the angel, Whereby shall I know this? for I am an old man, and my wife well stricken in years. And the angel answering, said unto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God; and am sent to speak unto thee, and to shew thee these glad tidings. And behold, thou shalt be dumb, and not able to speak, until the day that these things shall be performed, because thou believest not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season.

And the people waited for Zacharias, and marvelled that he tarried so long in the temple. And when he came out, he could not speak unto them: and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple; for he beckoned unto them, and remained speechless. And it came to pass, that as soon as the days of his ministration were accomplished, he departed to his own house. And after those days his wife Elisabeth conceived, and hid herself five months, saying, Thus hath the Lord dealt with me in the days wherein he looked on *me*, to take away my reproach among men.

§ 5. GABRIEL ANNOUNCES TO MARY, AT NAZARETH,
THE BIRTH OF JESUS.

Luke 1:26-38.

And in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from God unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth, to

a virgin espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgin's name *was* Mary. And the angel came in unto her, and said, Hail, *thou that art* highly favoured, the Lord *is* with thee: blessed *art* thou among women. And when she saw *him*, she was troubled at his saying, and cast in her mind what manner of salutation this should be. And the angel said unto her, Fear not, Mary: for thou hast found favour with God. And behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name JESUS. He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest; and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David. And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end.

Then said Mary unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man? And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God. And behold, thy cousin Elisabeth, she hath also conceived a son in her old age; and this is the sixth month with her who was called barren. For with God nothing shall be impossible.

And Mary said, Behold the handmaid of the Lord; be it unto me according to thy word. And the angel departed from her.

§ 6. MARY VISITS ELISABETH—IN THE HILL-COUNTRY OF JUDA—AT HEBRON OR JUTTAH, NEAR HEBRON.

Luke 1:39-56.

And Mary arose in those days, and went into the

hill-country with haste, into a city of Juda, and entered into the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elisabeth. And it came to pass, that when Elisabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb: and Elisabeth was filled with the Holy Ghost. And she spake out with a loud voice and said, Blessed *art* thou among women, and blessed *is* the fruit of thy womb. And whence *is* this to me, that the mother of my Lord should come to me? For lo, as soon as the voice of thy salutation sounded in mine ears, the babe leaped in my womb for joy. And blessed *is* she that believed: for there shall be a performance of those things which were told her from the Lord. And Mary said,

My soul doth magnify the Lord,
And my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour.
For he hath regarded the low estate of his hand-
maiden:

For behold, from henceforth all generations shall call
me blessed.

For he that is mighty hath done to me great things;
And holy *is* his name.

And his mercy *is* on them that fear him,
From generation to generation.

He hath shewed strength with his arm;

He hath scattered the proud in the imagination of
their hearts.

He hath put down the mighty from *their* seats,
And exalted them of low degree.

He hath filled the hungry with good things,
And the rich he hath sent empty away.

He hath holpen his servant Israel, in remembrance of
his mercy;

As he spake to our fathers, to Abraham, and to his
seed, for ever.

And Mary abode with her about three months, and
returned to her own house.

§ 7. BIRTH OF JOHN THE BAPTIST—IN THE HILL-COUNTRY OF JUDEA.

Luke 1:57-80.

Now Elisabeth's full time came that she should be delivered; and she brought forth a son. And her neighbours and her cousins heard how the Lord had shewed great mercy upon her; and they rejoiced with her.

And it came to pass, that on the eighth day they came to circumcise the child; and they called him Zacharias, after the name of his father. And his mother answered and said, Not so; but he shall be called John. And they said unto her, There is none of thy kindred that is called by this name. And they made signs to his father, how he would have him called. And he asked for a writing-table, and wrote, saying, His name is John. And they marvelled all. And his mouth was opened immediately, and his tongue *loosed*, and he spake, and praised God.

And fear came on all that dwelt round about them: and all these sayings were noised abroad throughout all the hill-country of Judea. And all they that heard *them*, laid *them* up in their hearts, saying, What manner of child shall this be! And the hand of the Lord was with him.

And his father Zacharias was filled with the Holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying,

Blessed *be* the Lord God of Israel;
For he hath visited and redeemed his people,
And hath raised up an horn of salvation for us,
In the house of his servant David:
As he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets,

Which have been since the world began :
 That we should be saved from our enemies,
 And from the hand of all that hate us;
 To perform the mercy *promised* to our fathers,
 And to remember his holy covenant;
 The oath which he sware to our father Abraham,
 That he would grant unto us,
 That we, being delivered out of the hand of our
 enemies,
 Might serve him without fear,
 In holiness and righteousness before him,
 All the days of our life.
 And thou, child, shalt be called the prophet of the
 Highest,
 For thou shalt go before the face of the Lord to pre-
 pare his ways;
 To give knowledge of salvation unto his people,
 By the remission of their sins,
 Through the tender mercy of our God;
 Whereby the day-spring from on high hath visited us,
 To give light to them that sit in darkness and *in* the
 shadow of death,
 To guide our feet into the way of peace.

And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and
 was in the deserts till the day of his shewing unto
 Israel.

§ 8. BIRTH OF JESUS ANNOUNCED BY AN ANGEL TO
 JOSEPH AT NAZARETH IN A DREAM.

Matt. 1: 18-25.

Now the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise:
 When as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph,
 before they came together, she was found with child of
 the Holy Ghost. Then Joseph her husband, being a
 just *man*, and not willing to make her a public exam-
 ple, was minded to put her away privily. But while

he thought on these things, behold, the angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost. And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.

Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying,

Behold, a virgin shall be with child,
And shall bring forth a son,
And they shall call his name Emmanuel,

which being interpreted is, God with us. Then Joseph, being raised from sleep, did as the angel of the Lord had bidden him, and took unto him his wife: And knew her not till she had brought forth her first-born son.

§ 9. BIRTH OF JESUS AT BETHLEHEM.

Luke 2: 1-7.

And it came to pass in those days, that there went out a decree from Cæsar Augustus, that all the world should be taxed. (*And* this taxing was first made when Cyrenius was governor of Syria.) And all went to be taxed, every one into his own city. And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judea, unto the city of David, which is called Bethlehem, (because he was of the house and lineage of David,) to be taxed with Mary his espoused wife, being great with child.

And so it was, that while they were there, the days were accomplished that she should be delivered. And

she brought forth her first-born son, and wrapped him in swaddling-clothes, and laid him in a manger; because there was no room for them in the inn.

§ 10. AN ANGEL APPEARS TO THE SHEPHERDS NEAR
BETHLEHEM—THE SHEPHERDS VISIT JESUS
AT BETHLEHEM.

Luke 2:8-20.

And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night. And lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them; and they were sore afraid. And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. For unto you is born this day, in the city of David, a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. And this *shall be* a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling-clothes, lying in a manger.

And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying,

Glory to God in the highest,
And on earth peace, good will toward men.

And it came to pass, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us. And they came with haste, and found Mary and Joseph, and the babe lying in a manger. And when they had seen *it*, they made known abroad the saying which was told them concerning this child. And all they that heard *it* won-

dered at those things which were told them by the shepherds. But Mary kept all these things, and pondered *them* in her heart. And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had heard and seen, as it was told unto them.

§ 11. CIRCUMCISION OF JESUS AT BETHLEHEM.

Matt. 1: 25. Luke 2: 21.

And when eight days were accomplished for the circumcising of the child, his name was called JESUS; which was so named of the angel before he was conceived in the womb.

§ 12. PRESENTATION OF JESUS IN THE TEMPLE AT JERUSALEM—SIMEON AND ANNA BEAR TESTIMONY CONCERNING HIM.

Luke 2: 22-38.

And when the days of her purification according to the law of Moses were accomplished, they brought him to Jerusalem, to present *him* to the Lord; (As it is written in the law of the Lord, Every male that openeth the womb shall be called holy to the Lord;) and to offer a sacrifice according to that which is said in the law of the Lord, A pair of turtle-doves, or two young pigeons.

And behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name *was* Simeon; and the same man *was* just and devout, waiting for the consolation of Israel: and the Holy Ghost was upon him. And it was revealed unto him by the Holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Lord's Christ. And he came by the Spirit into the temple; and when the parents

brought in the child Jesus, to do for him after the custom of the law, then took he him up in his arms, and blessed God, and said,

Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace,
According to thy word:

For mine eyes have seen thy salvation,
Which thou hast prepared before the face of all
people;

A light to lighten the Gentiles,
And the glory of thy people Israel.

And Joseph and his mother marvelled at those things which were spoken of him. And Simeon blessed them, and said unto Mary his mother, Behold, this *child* is set for the fall and rising again of many in Israel; and for a sign which shall be spoken against, (yea, a sword shall pierce through thy own soul also,) that the thoughts of many hearts may be revealed.

And there was one Anna, a prophetess, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aser: she was of a great age, and had lived with an husband seven years from her virginity; and she *was* a widow of about fourscore and four years, which departed not from the temple, but served *God* with fastings and prayers night and day. And she coming in that instant, gave thanks likewise unto the Lord, and spake of him to all them that looked for redemption in Jerusalem.

§ 13. JOSEPH AND MARY, WITH JESUS, RETURN TEMPORARILY TO NAZARETH, SEVENTY MILES FROM JERUSALEM.

Luke 2: 39.

And when they had performed all things according to the law of the Lord, they returned into Gallilee, to their own city Nazareth.

§ 14. THE MAGI VISIT HEROD AT JERUSALEM AND
JESUS AT BETHLEHEM.

Matt. 2 : 1-12.

Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem, saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him.

When Herod the king had heard *these things*, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him. And when he had gathered all the chief priests and scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Christ should be born. And they said unto him, In Bethlehem of Judea: for thus it is written by the prophet,

And thou Bethlehem, *in* the land of Juda,
Art not the least among the princes of Juda,
For out of thee shall come a Governor,
That shall rule my people Israel.

Then Herod, when he had privily called the wise men, inquired of them diligently what time the star appeared. And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Go, and search diligently for the young child, and when ye have found *him*, bring me word again, that I may come and worship him also. When they had heard the king, they departed; and lo, the star, which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young child was. When they saw the star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy.

And when they were come into the house they saw the young child with Mary his mother, and fell down, and worshipped him; and when they had opened their treasures they presented unto him gifts; gold and

frankincense, and myrrh. And being warned of God in a dream that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own country another way.

§ 15. FLIGHT INTO EGYPT, ABOUT SIXTY MILES SOUTH-EAST OF BETHLEHEM.

Matt. 2: 13-15.

And when they were departed, behold, the angel of the Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I bring thee word: for Herod will seek the young child to destroy him. When he arose, he took the young child and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt: and was there until the death of Herod: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying,

Out of Egypt have I called my Son.

§ 16. MASSACRE OF THE CHILDREN AT BETHLEHEM.

Matt. 2: 16-18.

Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had diligently inquired of the wise men. Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying,

In Rama was there a voice heard,
Lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning,
Rachel weeping *for* her children,
And would not be comforted, because they are not.

§ 17. THE RETURN FROM EGYPT TO NAZARETH,
ABOUT ONE HUNDRED AND THIRTY MILES.

Matt. 2: 19-23. Luke 2: 40.

But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt, saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel: for they are dead which sought the young child's life. And he arose, and took the young child and his mother, and came into the land of Israel. But when he heard that Archelaus did reign in Judea in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither: notwithstanding, being warned of God in a dream, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee. And he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene. And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisdom; and the grace of God was upon him.

§ 18. JESUS AT TWELVE YEARS OF AGE GOES TO
JERUSALEM AT THE FEAST OF THE PASSOVER.

Luke 2: 41-50.

Now his parents went to Jerusalem every year at the feast of the passover. And when he was twelve years old, they went up to Jerusalem after the custom of the feast. And when they had fulfilled the days, as they returned, the child Jesus tarried behind in Jerusalem; and Joseph and his mother knew not *of it*. But they, supposing him to have been in the company, went a day's journey; and they sought him among *their* kinsfolk and acquaintance. And when they found him not, they turned back again to Jerusalem, seeking him.

And it came to pass, that after three days they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the doctors, both hearing them, and asking them questions. And all that heard him were astonished at his understanding and answers. And when they saw him, they were amazed: and his mother said unto him, Son, why hast thou thus dealt with us? behold, thy father and I have sought thee sorrowing. And he said unto them, How is it that ye sought me? wist ye not that I must be about my Father's business? And they understood not the saying which he spake unto them.

§ 19. JESUS RETURNS TO NAZARETH, WHERE HE
REMAINS SUBJECT TO HIS PARENTS UNTIL THE
BEGINNING OF HIS MINISTRY.

Luke 2:51-52.

And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subject unto them: but his mother kept all these sayings in her heart. And Jesus increased in wisdom and stature, and in favour with God and man.

CHAPTER II.

THE ANNOUNCEMENT AND INTRODUCTION OF CHRIST'S PUBLIC MINISTRY.

Time, About One Year.

§ 20. THE MINISTRY OF JOHN THE BAPTIST IN THE DESERT AND AT THE JORDAN.

Matt. 3 : 1-12. Mark 1 : 1-8. Luke 3 : 1-18.

The beginning of the Gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God. Now in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Cesar, Pontius Pilate being governor of Judea, and Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip tetrarch of Iturea and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanias the tetrarch of Abilene, Annas and Caiaphas being the high priests, the word of God came unto John the Baptist the son of Zacharias in the wilderness of Judea.

And he came into all the country about Jordan, and did baptize, preaching the baptism of repentance, for the remission of sins; and saying, Repent ye; for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.

As it is written in the prophets,

Behold I send my messenger before thy face,
Which shall prepare thy way before thee.

For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet Esaias, saying,

The voice of one crying in the wilderness,
Prepare ye the way of the Lord,
Make his paths straight.
Every valley shall be filled,
And every mountain and hill shall be brought low;
And the crooked shall be made straight,
And the rough ways *shall be* made smooth;
And all flesh shall see the salvation of God.

And the same John had his raiment of camel's hair, and a leathern girdle about his loins; and his meat was locusts and wild honey.

Then went out to him they of Jerusalem, and all the land of Judea, and all the region round about Jordan, and were baptized of him in the river of Jordan, confessing their sins.

But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come? bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance: and think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to *our* father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham. And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

And the people asked him, saying, What shall we do then? He answereth and saith unto them, He that hath two coats, let him impart to him that hath none; and he that hath meat, let him do likewise.

Then came also publicans to be baptized, and said

unto him, Master, what shall we do? And he said unto them, Exact no more than that which is appointed you.

And the soldiers likewise demanded of him, saying, And what shall we do? And he said unto them, Do violence to no man, neither accuse *any* falsely; and be content with your wages.

And as the people were in expectation, and all men mused in their hearts of John, whether he were the Christ, or not; John answered, saying unto *them* all, I indeed baptize you with water unto repentance: but there cometh one mightier than I after me, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to stoop down and unloose. He shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and *with* fire: whose fan *is* in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner; but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire. And many other things in his exhortation preached he unto the people.

§ 21. THE BAPTISM OF JESUS IN JORDAN.

Probably at the Ford near Jericho.

Matt. 3: 13-17. Mark 1: 9-11. Luke 3: 21-23. John 1: 32.

And it came to pass in those days, when all the people were baptized, that Jesus, who began to be about thirty years of age, came from Nazareth of Galilee, to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him. But John forbade him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?

And Jesus answering said unto him, Suffer *it to be so* now: for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he suffered him.

And Jesus, when he was baptized, and praying, went up straightway out of the water: and lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he and John saw the Spirit of God descending in a bodily shape like a dove, and lighting upon him: and it abode upon him, and a voice came from heaven, which said, Thou art (This is—Matt.) my beloved Son; in thee (whom—Matt.) I am well pleased.

§ 22. JESUS IS TEMPTED IN THE WILDERNESS OF JUDEA AND AT JERUSALEM.

Probably West of Jordan and Dead Sea.

Matt. 4: 1-11. Mark 1: 12-13. Luke 4: 1-13.

And Jesus being full of the Holy Ghost, returned from Jordan, and was immediately led (driven—Mark) by the Spirit into the wilderness, to be tempted of the devil. And he was there in the wilderness forty days and forty nights tempted of Satan; and was with the wild beasts; and in those days he did eat nothing: and when they were ended, he afterward hungered.

And the devil said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, command this stone (these stones—Matt.) that it be made bread. And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

Then the devil taketh him up into the holy city, Jerusalem, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the temple, and saith unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down, from hence, for it is written,

He shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee:

And in *their* hands they shall bear thee up,
Lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.

And Jesus answering, said unto him, It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them in a moment of time. And the devil said unto him, All this power (these things—Matt.) will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me, and to whomsoever I will, I give it. If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behind me, (hence—Matt.) Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.

And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a season, and behold, angels came and ministered unto him.

§ 23. JOHN THE BAPTIST BEARS WITNESS THAT JESUS IS THE SON OF GOD.

Bethabara (or Bethany) Beyond (East of) Jordan.

John 1:15-34.

John bare witness of him, and cried, saying, This was he of whom I spake, He that cometh after me is preferred before me; for he was before me. And of his fulness have all we received, and grace for grace. For the law was given by Moses, *but* grace and truth came by Jesus Christ. No man hath seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared *him*.

And this is the record of John, when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem, to ask him, Who art thou? And he confessed, and denied not; but

confessed, I am not the Christ. And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he saith, I am not. Art thou that prophet? And he answered, No. Then said they unto him, Who art thou? that we may give an answer to them that sent us. What sayest thou of thyself? He said,

I am the voice of one crying in the wilderness,
Make straight the way of the Lord,

as said the prophet Esaias.

And they which were sent were of the Pharisees. And they asked him, and said unto him, Why baptizest thou then, if thou be not that Christ, nor Elias, neither that prophet? John answered them, saying, I baptize with water: but there standeth one among you, whom ye know not: he it is, who coming after me, is preferred before me, whose shoe's latchet I am not worthy to unloose. These things were done in Bethabara beyond Jordan, where John was baptizing.

The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world! This is he of whom I said, After me cometh a man which is preferred before me; for he was before me. And I knew him not: but that he should be made manifest to Israel, therefore am I come baptizing with water.

And John bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descending from heaven like a dove, and it abode upon him. And I knew him not: but he that sent me to baptize with water, the same said unto me, Upon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending and remaining on him, the same is he which baptizeth

with the Holy Ghost. And I saw and bare record, that this is the Son of God.

§ 24. JESUS GAINS HIS FIRST DISCIPLES.

Bethabara (or Bethany) Beyond (East of) Jordan.

John 1:35-51.

Again the next day after, John stood, and two of his disciples; and looking upon Jesus as he walked, he saith, Behold the Lamb of God! And the two disciples heard him speak, and they followed Jesus. Then Jesus turned, and saw them following, and saith unto them, What seek ye? They said unto him, Rabbi, (which is to say, being interpreted, Master,) where dwellest thou? He saith unto them, Come and see. They came and saw where he dwelt, and abode with him that day: for it was about the tenth hour.

One of the two which heard John *speak*, and followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peter's brother. He first findeth his own brother Simon, and saith unto him, We have found the Messias; which is, being interpreted, the Christ. And he brought him to Jesus. And when Jesus beheld him, he said, Thou art Simon the son of Jona: thou shalt be called Cephas; which is, by interpretation, a stone.

The day following Jesus would go forth into Galilee, and findeth Philip, and saith unto him, Follow me. Now Philip was of Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and Peter. Philip findeth Nathanael, and saith unto him, We have found him of whom Moses in the law, and the prophets, did write, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph. And Nathanael said unto him, Can there

any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip saith unto him, Come and see.

Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and saith of him, Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile! Nathanael saith unto him, Whence knowest thou me? Jesus answered and said unto him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou wast under the fig-tree, I saw thee. Nathanael answered and saith unto him, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God; thou art the King of Israel. Jesus answered and said unto him, Because I said unto thee, I saw thee under the fig-tree, believest thou? thou shalt see greater things than these. And he saith unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Hereafter ye shall see heaven open, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of man.

§ 25. JESUS' FIRST MIRACLE AT THE MARRIAGE IN
CANA OF GALILEE.

John 2:1-11.

And the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee; and the mother of Jesus was there. And both Jesus was called, and his disciples, to the marriage. And when they wanted wine, the mother of Jesus saith unto him, They have no wine. Jesus saith unto her, Woman, what have I to do with thee? mine hour is not yet come. His mother saith unto the servants, Whatsoever he saith unto you, do *it*. And there were set there six water-pots of stone, after the manner of the purifying of the Jews, containing two or three firkins apiece. Jesus saith unto them, Fill the water-pots with water. And they filled them up to the brim. And he saith unto them, Draw out now,

and bear unto the governor of the feast. And they bare *it*. When the ruler of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, and knew not whence it was, (but the servants which drew the water knew,) the governor of the feast called the bridegroom, and saith unto him, Every man at the beginning doth set forth good wine; and when men have well drunk, then that which is worse: *but* thou hast kept the good wine until now. This beginning of miracles did Jesus in Cana of Galilee, and manifested forth his glory; and his disciples believed on him.

§ 26. JESUS VISITS CAPERNAUM.

John 2:12.

After this he went down to Capernaum, he, and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples; and they continued there not many days.

CHAPTER III.

FROM THE FIRST PASSOVER DURING
CHRIST'S PUBLIC MINISTRY UNTIL
THE SECOND.

Time, One Year.

§ 27. JESUS GOES TO JERUSALEM; ATTENDS THE
PASSOVER AND EXPELS THE TRADERS
FROM THE TEMPLE, ETC.

John 2:13-25.

And the Jews' passover was at hand, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem, and found in the temple those that sold oxen, and sheep, and doves, and the changers of money, sitting: and when he had made a scourge of small cords, he drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep, and the oxen; and poured out the changers' money, and overthrew the tables; and said unto them that sold doves, Take these things hence: make not my Father's house an house of merchandise. And his disciples remembered that it was written, The zeal of thine house hath eaten me up. Then answered the Jews, and said unto him, What sign shewest thou unto us, seeing that thou doest these things? Jesus answered and said unto them, Destroy this temple, and in

three days I will raise it up. Then said the Jews, Forty and six years was this temple in building, and wilt thou rear it up in three days? But he spake of the temple of his body. When therefore he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembered that he had said this unto them: and they believed the scripture, and the word which Jesus had said.

Now when he was in Jerusalem at the passover, in the feast-day, many believed in his name, when they saw the miracles which he did. But Jesus did not commit himself unto them, because he knew all *men*, and needed not that any should testify of man: for he knew what was in man.

§ 28. JESUS TEACHES NICODEMUS OF THE NEW BIRTH.

Jerusalem.

John 3: 1-21.

There was a man of the Pharisees named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews: the same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him.

Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born?

Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water, and *of* the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh, is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit, is spirit. Marvel not that I said unto thee,

Ye must be born again. The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit.

Nicodemus answered and said unto him, How can these things be? Jesus answered and said unto him, Art thou a master of Israel, and knowest not these things? Verily, verily, I say unto thee, We speak that we do know, and testify that we have seen; and ye receive not our witness. If I have told you earthly things, and ye believe not, how shall ye believe if I tell you *of* heavenly things? And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, *even* the Son of man which is in heaven. And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up: that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life. For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world through him might be saved. He that believeth on him, is not condemned: but he that believeth not, is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved. But he that doeth truth, cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.

§ 29. JESUS DEPARTS FROM JERUSALEM INTO JUDEA.

Probably in the Region of the Jordan.

John 3 : 22-24.

After these things came Jesus and his disciples into the land of Judea; and there he tarried with them, and baptized. And John also was baptizing in Ænon, near to Salim, because there was much water there: and they came, and were baptized. For John was not yet cast into prison.

§ 30. JOHN THE BAPTIST GIVES HIS FINAL TESTIMONY OF JESUS.

Ænon.

John 3 : 25-36.

Then there arose a question between *some* of John's disciples and the Jews, about purifying. And they came unto John, and said unto him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Jordan, to whom thou barest witness, behold, the same baptizeth, and all *men* come to him. John answered and said, A man can receive nothing, except it be given him from heaven. Ye yourselves bear me witness, that I said, I am not the Christ, but that I am sent before him. He that hath the bride, is the bridegroom: but the friend of the bridegroom, which standeth and heareth him, rejoiceth greatly, because of the bridegroom's voice: this my joy therefore is fulfilled. He must increase, but I *must* decrease. He that cometh from above is above all: he that is of the earth is earthly, and speaketh of the earth: he that cometh from heaven is above all. And what he hath seen and heard, that he testifieth; and no

man receiveth his testimony. He that hath received his testimony, hath set to his seal that God is true. For he whom God hath sent, speaketh the words of God: for God giveth not the Spirit by measure *unto him*. The Father loveth the Son and hath given all things into his hand. He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son, shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.

§ 31. JOHN THE BAPTIST IN PRISON.

Probably in the Castle of Machærus, East of the Dead Sea.

Luke 3: 19-20. See Section 74.

But Herod the tetrarch being reproved by him for Herodias his brother Philip's wife, and for all the evils which Herod had done, added yet this above all, that he shut up John in prison.

§ 32. JESUS LEAVES JUDEA AND TRAVELS THROUGH SAMARIA TOWARDS GALILEE, AND CONVERSES WITH THE SAMARITAN WOMAN AT JACOB'S WELL.

Near Shechem, also called Sychar, Neapolis and Nabulus.

Matt. 4: 12. Mark 1: 14. Luke 4: 14. John 4: 1-42.

When therefore the Lord knew how the Pharisees had heard that Jesus made and baptized more disciples than John, (though Jesus himself baptized not, but his disciples,) and had heard that John was cast into prison, he left Judea, and returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee: And he must needs go through

Samaria. Then cometh he to a city of Samaria, which is called Sychar, near to the parcel of ground that Jacob gave to his son Joseph. Now Jacob's well was there. Jesus therefore being wearied with *his* journey, sat thus on the well: *and* it was about the sixth hour.

There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water: Jesus saith unto her, Give me to drink. (For his disciples were gone away unto the city to buy meat.) Then saith the woman of Samaria unto him, How is it that thou, being a Jew, askest drink of me, which am a woman of Samaria? for the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritans. Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Give me to drink; thou wouldest have asked of him, and he would have given thee living water. The woman saith unto him, Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deep: from whence then hast thou that living water? Art thou greater than our father Jacob, which gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his children, and his cattle? Jesus answered and said unto her, Whosoever drinketh of this water, shall thirst again: but whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him, shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him, shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life. The woman saith unto him, Sir, give me this water, that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw.

Jesus saith unto her, Go call thy husband, and come hither. The woman answered and said, I have no husband. Jesus said unto her, Thou hast well said, I have no husband: for thou hast had five husbands, and

he whom thou now hast, is not thy husband: in that saidst thou truly.

The woman saith unto him, Sir, I perceive that thou art a prophet. Our fathers worshipped in this mountain; and ye say, that in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship. Jesus saith unto her, Woman, believe me, the hour cometh, when ye shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem, worship the Father. Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we worship, for salvation is of the Jews. But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God *is* a Spirit: and they that worship him, must worship *him* in spirit and in truth.

The woman saith unto him, I know that Messias cometh, which is called Christ; when he is come, he will tell us all things. Jesus saith unto her, I that speak unto thee am *he*. And upon this came his disciples, and marvelled that he talked with the woman: yet no man said, What seekest thou? or, Why talkest thou with her? The woman then left her water-pot, and went her way into the city, and saith to the men, Come, see a man which told me all things that ever I did: is not this the Christ? Then they went out of the city, and came unto him. In the mean while his disciples prayed him, saying, Master, eat. But he said unto them, I have meat to eat that ye know not of. Therefore said the disciples one to another, Hath any man brought him *ought* to eat? Jesus saith unto them, My meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to finish his work. Say not ye, There are yet four

months, and *then* cometh harvest? behold, I say unto you, Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields; for they are white already to harvest. And he that reapeth receiveth wages, and gathereth fruit unto life eternal: that both he that soweth, and he that reapeth, may rejoice together. And herein is that saying true, One soweth, and another reapeth. I sent you to reap that whereon ye bestowed no labour: other men laboured, and ye are entered into their labours.

And many of the Samaritans of that city believed on him for the saying of the woman, which testified, He told me all that ever I did. So when the Samaritans were come unto him, they besought him that he would tarry with them: and he abode there two days. And many more believed, because of his own word; and said unto the woman, Now we believe, not because of thy saying: for we have heard *him* ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world.

§ 33. JESUS TEACHES IN THE SYNAGOGUES OF GALILEE.

Matt. 4: 17. Mark 1: 14-15. Luke 4: 14-15. John 4: 43-45.

Now after two days he departed thence, and went into Galilee. For Jesus himself testified, that a prophet hath no honour in his own country. Then when he was come into Galilee, the Galileans received him, having seen all the things that he did at Jerusalem at the feast: for they also went unto the feast.

From that time Jesus began to preach the gospel of the kingdom of God, saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye. and

believe the gospel. And there went out a fame of him through all the region round about. And he taught in their synagogues, being glorified of all.

§ 34. JESUS COMES TO CANA AND HEALS THE NOBLE-MAN'S SON LYING ILL AT CAPERNAUM.

John 4:46-54.

So Jesus came again into Cana of Galilee, where he made the water wine. And there was a certain nobleman, whose son was sick at Capernaum. When he heard that Jesus was come out of Judea into Galilee, he went unto him, and besought him that he would come down, and heal his son: for he was at the point of death. Then said Jesus unto him, Except ye see signs and wonders, ye will not believe. The nobleman saith unto him, Sir, come down ere my child die. Jesus saith unto him, Go thy way; thy son liveth. And the man believed the word that Jesus had spoken unto him, and he went his way. And as he was now going down, his servants met him, and told *him*, saying, Thy son liveth. Then inquired he of them the hour when he began to amend. And they said unto him, Yesterday at the seventh hour the fever left him. So the father knew that *it was* at the same hour, in the which Jesus said unto him, Thy son liveth: and himself believed, and his whole house. This *is* again the second miracle *that* Jesus did, when he was come out of Judea into Galilee.

§ 35. JESUS AT NAZARETH—REJECTED.

Luke 4:16-30.

And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and, as his custom was, he went into the

synagogue on the sabbath-day, and stood up for to read. And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias. And when he had opened the book, he found the place where it was written,

The Spirit of the Lord *is* upon me,
Because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to
the poor;

He hath sent me to heal the broken-hearted,
To preach deliverance to the captives,
And recovering of sight to the blind,
To set at liberty them that are bruised,
To preach the acceptable year of the Lord.

And he closed the book, and he gave *it* again to the minister, and sat down. And the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him. And he began to say unto them, This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears. And all bare him witness, and wondered at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said, Is not this Joseph's son? And he said unto them, Ye will surely say unto me this proverb, Physician, heal thyself: whatsoever we have heard done in Capernaum, do also here in thy country. And he said, Verily I say unto you, No prophet is accepted in his own country. But I tell you of a truth, many widows were in Israel in the days of Elias, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, when great famine was throughout all the land: but unto none of them was Elias sent, save unto Sarepta, *a city* of Sidon, unto a woman *that was* a widow. And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Eliseus the prophet; and none of them was cleansed, saving Naaman the Syrian. And all

they in the synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath, and rose up, and thrust him out of the city, and led him unto the brow of the hill, (whereon their city was built,) that they might cast him down headlong. But he, passing through the midst of them, went his way.

§ 36. JESUS GOES TO CAPERNAUM AND RESIDES THERE.

Matt. 4: 13-16. Luke 4: 31.

And leaving Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Capernaum, a city of Galilee, which is upon the sea-coast, in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthalim; that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying,

The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephthalim,
By the way of the sea,
Beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles:
The people which sat in darkness, saw great light,
And to them which sat in the region and shadow of
death,
Light is sprung up.

§ 37. JESUS CALLS PETER, ANDREW, JAMES AND JOHN.

Sea of Galilee, near Capernaum.

Matt. 4: 18-22. Mark 1: 16-20.

And Jesus, walking by the sea of Galilee, saw two brethren, Simon called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea; for they were fishers. And he saith unto them, Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men. And straightway they forsook their nets, and followed him. And when he had gone a

little further thence, he saw other two brethren, James *the son* of Zebedee, and John his brother, in a ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets: and straightway he called them: and they immediately left their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired servants, and went after him.

§ 38. JESUS HEALS A DEMONIAK IN THE SYNAGOGUE
AT CAPERNAUM.

Mark 1: 21-28. Luke 4: 31-37.

And they went into Capernaum; and straightway on the sabbath-day he entered into the synagogue and taught. And they were astonished at his doctrine: for his word was with power, and he taught them as one that had authority, and not as the scribes.

And in the synagogue there was a man which had a spirit of an unclean devil; and he cried out with a loud voice, saying, Let *us* alone; what have we to do with thee, *thou* Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the Holy One of God. And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when the devil had torn him, and cried with a loud voice, and had thrown him in the midst, he came out of him, and hurt him not. And they were all amazed, insomuch that they questioned among themselves, saying, What thing is this? what new doctrine *is* this? for with authority and power commandeth he even the unclean spirits, and they do obey him, (come out—Luke.) And immediately his fame spread abroad unto every place of the country throughout all the region round about Galilee.

§ 39. JESUS HEALS PETER'S WIFE'S MOTHER AND
MANY OTHERS.

Capernaum.

Matt. 8: 14-17. Mark 1: 29-34. Luke 4: 38-41.

And forthwith, when they were come out of the synagogue, they entered into the house of Simon and Andrew, with James and John. But Simon's wife's mother lay sick of a fever; and anon they tell him of her, and besought him for her. And he came and stood over her, and rebuked the fever and took her by the hand, and lifted her up; and immediately the fever left her, and she arose and ministered unto them.

Now when the sun was setting, they brought unto him many that were possessed with devils: and he cast out the spirits with *his* word. And devils also came out of many, crying out, and saying, Thou art Christ the Son of God. And he, rebuking *them*, suffered them not to speak: for they knew that he was Christ. And all the city was gathered together at the door, and all they that had any sick with divers diseases, brought them unto him: and he laid his hands on every one of them, and healed them. That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying,

Himself took our infirmities, and bare *our* sicknesses

§ 40. JESUS, WITH HIS DISCIPLES, MAKES HIS FIRST
TOUR THROUGH GALILEE.

Matt. 4: 23-35. Mark 1: 35-39. Luke 4: 42-44.

And in the morning, rising up a great while before day, he went out and departed into a solitary (desert—Luke) place, and there prayed, and when it was day the

people sought him. And Simon, and they that were with him, followed after him. And when they had found him, they said unto him, All *men* seek for thee. And he said unto them, Let us go into the next towns, that I may preach there also: for therefore came I forth. And the people came unto him, and stayed him, that he should not depart from them. And he said unto them, I must preach the kingdom of God to other cities also, for therefore am I sent.

And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of sickness, and all manner of disease among the people. And his fame went throughout all Syria: and they brought unto him all sick people that were taken with divers diseases and torments, and those which were possessed with devils, and those which were lunatic, and those that had the palsy; and he healed them. And there followed him great multitudes of people from Galilee, and *from* Decapolis, and *from* Jerusalem, and *from* Judea, and *from* beyond Jordan.

§ 41. JESUS TEACHES FROM A SHIP—THE MIRACULOUS
DRAUGHT OF FISHES.

Sea of Galilee, near Capernaum.

Luke 5: 1-11.

And it came to pass, that as the people pressed upon him to hear the word of God, he stood by the lake of Gennesaret, and saw two ships standing by the lake: but the fishermen were gone out of them, and were

washing *their* nets. And he entered into one of the ships, which was Simon's, and prayed him that he would thrust out a little from the land. And he sat down, and taught the people out of the ship. Now when he had left speaking, he said unto Simon, Launch out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught. And Simon answering, said unto him, Master, we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing; nevertheless, at thy word I will let down the net. And when they had this done, they inclosed a great multitude of fishes: and their net brake. And they beckoned unto *their* partners, which were in the other ship, that they should come and help them. And they came, and filled both the ships, so that they began to sink. When Simon Peter saw *it*, he fell down at Jesus' knees, saying, Depart from me; for I am a sinful man, O Lord. For he was astonished, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken: and so *was* also James and John the sons of Zebedee, which were partners with Simon. And Jesus said unto Simon, Fear not: from henceforth thou shalt catch men. And when they had brought their ships to land, they forsook all, and followed him.

§ 42. THE SERMON ON THE MOUNT.

Probably near Capernaum.

Matt. 5: 1 to 7: 29.

And seeing the multitudes, he went up into a mountain: and when he was set, his disciples came unto

him. And he opened his mouth, and taught them, saying,

WHO ARE HAPPY.

Blessed *are* the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

Blessed *are* they that mourn: for they shall be comforted.

Blessed *are* the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.

Blessed *are* they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled.

Blessed *are* the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy.

Blessed *are* the pure in heart: for they shall see God.

Blessed *are* the peace-makers: for they shall be called the children of God.

Blessed *are* they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

Blessed are ye when *men* shall revile you, and persecute *you*, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake.

Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great *is* your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.

CHRIST'S DISCIPLES ARE THE SALT AND LIGHT OF
THE WORLD.

Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men.

Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid. Neither do men light a candle,

and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick: and it giveth light unto all that are in the house. Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.

CHRIST CAME NOT TO DESTROY, BUT TO FULFIL THE
LAW.

Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do, and teach *them*, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven.

For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed *the righteousness* of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.

CHRISTIAN AND PHARISAICAL EXPOUNDING OF THE
LAW CONTRASTED.

Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill, shall be in danger of the judgment: but I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause, shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, *Thou* fool, shall be in danger of hell-fire. Therefore, if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy

brother hath aught against thee, leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.

Agree with thine adversary quickly, while thou art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.

Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: but I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adultery with her already in his heart. And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast *it* from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not *that* thy whole body should be cast into hell. And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast *it* from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not *that* thy whole body should be cast into hell.

It hath been said, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement: but I say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced, committeth adultery.

Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths: but I say unto you, Swear not at all: neither by heaven; for it is God's throne: nor by the earth; for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem; for it is the city of the great King.

neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black. But let your communication be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay: for whatsoever *is* more than these cometh of evil.

Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth. But I say unto you, That ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also. And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have *thy* cloak also. And whosoever shall compel thee to go a mile, go with him twain. Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee, turn not thou away.

Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy: but I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; that ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust. For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same? And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more *than others*? do not even the publicans so? Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.

OF ALMS GIVING.

Take heed that ye do not your alms before men, to be seen of them: otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in heaven. Therefore, when thou doest *thine* alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee,

as the hypocrites do, in the synagogues, and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth; that thine alms may be in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret, himself shall reward thee openly.

OF PRAYER.

And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites *are*: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues, and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father, which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen *do*: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of before ye ask him. After this manner therefore pray ye:

Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth as *it is* in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil. For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.

For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you: but if ye forgive not men

their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

OF FASTING.

Moreover, when ye fast, be not as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to fast. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But thou, when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and wash thy face; that thou appear not unto men to fast, but unto thy Father, which is in secret: and thy Father, which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

OF CONSECRATION TO GOD.

Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal: but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal. For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light. But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great *is* that darkness!

No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

OF DEPENDENCE UPON GOD.

Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet

for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the life more than meat, and the body than raiment? behold the fowls of the air: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they? Which of you by taking thought can add one cubit unto his stature? And why take ye thought for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin; and yet I say unto you, That even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. Wherefore, if God so clothe the grass of the field, which to-day is, and to-morrow is cast into the oven, *shall he* not much more *clothe* you, O ye of little faith? Therefore take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed? (For after all these things do the Gentiles seek:) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things. But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness, and all these things shall be added unto you. Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of itself. Sufficient unto the day *is* the evil thereof.

OF JUDGING.

Judge not, that ye be not judged. For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again. And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote out of thine eye; and

behold, a beam *is* in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brother's eye.

OF HOLY THINGS

Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you.

ASK. SEEK, KNOCK.

Ask, and it shall be given you, seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: For every one that asketh, receiveth; and he that seeketh, findeth; and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened. Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone? Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent? If ye then being evil know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him? Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets.

OF THE NARROW WAY—AND FALSE PROPHETS.

Enter ye in at the strait gate; for wide *is* the gate, and broad *is* the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: because, strait *is* the gate, and narrow *is* the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.

Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening

wolves. Ye shall know them by their fruits: Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither *can* a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. Wherefore, by their fruits ye shall know them.

Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.

OF HEARING AND DOING.

Therefore, whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock: and the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock. And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: and the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it. And it came to pass when Jesus had ended these sayings, the people were astonished at his doctrine. For he taught them as *one* having authority, and not as the scribes.

§ 43. JESUS HEALS A LEPER.

Some Town in Galilee.

Matt. 8: 1-4. Mark 1: 40-45. Luke 5: 12-16.

When he was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him.

And it came to pass, when he was in a certain city, behold, a man full of leprosy: who seeing Jesus, came to him beseeching him, and kneeling down to him, fell on *his* face and worshipped him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean. And Jesus, moved with compassion, put forth *his* hand, and touched him, and saith unto him, I will; be thou clean. And as soon as he had spoken, immediately the leprosy departed from him, and he was cleansed. And he straitly charged him, and forthwith sent him away; and saith unto him, See thou say nothing to any man; but go thy way, shew thyself to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing those things which Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them. But he went out, and began to publish *it* much, and to blaze abroad the matter, insomuch that Jesus could no more openly enter into the city, but was without in desert places: and great multitudes came together from every quarter, to hear and to be healed by him of their infirmities.

And he withdrew himself into the wilderness, and prayed.

§ 44. JESUS RETURNS TO CAPERNAUM AND HEALS A PARALYTIC.

Matt. 9: 2-8. Mark 2: 1-12. Luke 5: 17-26.

And again he entered into Capernaum, after *some* days; and it was noised that he was in the house.

And straightway many were gathered together, inso-much that there was no room to receive *them*, no, not so much as about the door: and he preached the word unto them. And it came to pass on a certain day, as he was teaching, that there were Pharisees and doctors of the law sitting by, which were come out of every town of Galilee, and Judea, and Jerusalem: and the power of the Lord was *present* to heal them.

And they come unto him, bringing a man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed which was borne of four, and they sought *means* to bring him in, and to lay *him* before him. And when they could not find by what *way* they might bring him in, because of the multitude, they went upon the house-top, uncovered the roof where he was, and when they had broken *it* up, they let him down through the tiling with the bed wherein the sick of the palsy lay, into the midst before Jesus. When Jesus saw their faith, he said unto the sick of the palsy, Son, be of good cheer; thy sins be forgiven thee. But there were certain of the scribes and Pharisees sitting there, began reasoning in their hearts, saying within themselves, Who is this which speaketh blasphemies? Why doth this *man* thus speak blasphemies? who can forgive sins but God only? And immediately, when Jesus perceived in his spirit that they so reasoned within themselves, he said unto them, Wherefore think ye evil in your hearts? Why reason ye these things in your hearts? Whether is it easier to say to the sick of the palsy, *Thy* sins be forgiven thee; or to say, Arise, and take up thy bed, and walk? But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins, (he saith to the sick of the palsy,)

I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy bed, and go thy way into thine house. And immediately he arose, took up the bed whereon he lay, and went forth before them all; and departed to his own house, glorifying God.

But when the multitude saw *it*, they were all amazed, and marvelled, and glorified God, which had given such power unto men, saying, We never saw it on this fashion, and were filled with fear, saying, We have seen strange things to-day.

§ 45. JESUS CALLS MATTHEW.

Capernaum.

Matt. 9:9. Mark 2:13-14. Luke 5:27-28.

And after these things he went forth, from thence again by the sea-side; and all the multitude resorted unto him, and he taught them. And as he passed by, he saw a man named Matthew, also called Levi, the son of Alphaeus, a publican, sitting at the receipt of custom, and said unto him, Follow me. And he left all, rose up, and followed him.

§ 46. JESUS EATS WITH PUBLICANS AND SINNERS AND DISCOURSES OF FASTING AT MATTHEW'S FEAST.

Capernaum.

Matt. 9:10-17. Mark 2:15-22. Luke 5:29-39.

And Levi made him a great feast in his own house; and it came to pass, that as Jesus sat at meat in his house, many publicans and sinners sat also together with Jesus and his disciples; for there were many, and they followed him. And when the scribes and Pharisees saw him eat with publicans and sinners, they

murmured against his disciples, and said unto them, How is it that your Master and ye eat and drink with publicans and sinners? When Jesus heard *it*, he saith unto them, They that are whole, have no need of the physician, but they that are sick: but go ye and learn what *that* meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

And the disciples of John, and of the Pharisees, used to fast: and they come, and say unto him, Why do the disciples of John, and of the Pharisees fast often, and make prayers, but thy disciples eat and drink and fast not? And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bride-chamber fast, or mourn, while the bridegroom is with them? As long as they have the bridegroom with them, they cannot fast. But the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in those days.

And he spake also a parable unto them: No man also seweth a piece of new cloth on an old garment: for that which is put in to fill it up, agreeth not with the old, *but* taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse. And no man putteth new wine into old bottles; else the new wine will burst the bottles, and be spilled, and the bottles shall perish. But new wine must be put into new bottles, and both are preserved. No man also having drunk old *wine*, straightway desireth new: for he saith, The old is better.

§ 47. JESUS RAISES JAIRUS' DAUGHTER, AND HEALS
THE WOMAN WITH AN ISSUE OF BLOOD.

Capernaum.

Matt. 9: 18-26. Mark 5: 22-43. Luke 8: 41-56.

While he spake these things unto them, behold, there came one of the rulers of the synagogue, Jairus by name; and when he saw him, he fell at his feet, and worshipped him, and besought him greatly, saying, My little daughter (for he had one only daughter, about twelve years of age,) lieth at the point of death: *I pray thee*, come and lay thy hands on her, that she may be healed; and she shall live. And Jesus arose, and went with him, and *so did* his disciples, and much people followed him, and thronged him.

(And behold, a woman which was diseased with an issue of blood twelve years, and had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all that she had, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse, when she had heard of Jesus came in the press behind, and touched the border of his garment: for she said, If I may touch but his clothes, I shall be whole. And straightway the fountain of her blood was dried up; and she felt in *her* body that she was healed of that plague. And Jesus, immediately knowing in himself that virtue had gone out of him, turned him about in the press, and said, Who touched my clothes? When all denied, Peter, and they that were with him, said, Master, Thou seest the multitude throng thee, and press *thee*, and sayest thou, Who touched me? And Jesus said, Somebody hath touched me: for I perceive that virtue is gone out of me. And he looked round about to see her that had done this thing. And when

the woman saw that she was not hid, she came trembling, and falling down before him, she declared unto him before all the people, all the truth, for what cause she had touched him, and how she was healed immediately. And he said unto her, Daughter, be of good comfort: thy faith hath made thee whole; go in peace, and be whole of thy plague. And the woman was made whole from that hour.)

While he yet spake, there came one from the ruler of the synagogue's *house* which said unto him, Thy daughter is dead: why troublest thou the Master any further? As soon as Jesus heard the word that was spoken, he saith unto the ruler of the synagogue, Be not afraid, only believe, and she shall be made whole. And when he came into the house, he suffered no man to go in, save Peter, and James, and John the brother of James, and the father and the mother of the maiden. And all wept and bewailed her. And when Jesus came into the ruler's house, and saw the tumult and the minstrels and the people that wept and wailed greatly, making a noise, he said unto them, Give place: Why make ye this ado, and weep? Weep not: for the maid is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that she was dead. But when he had put the people all out, he taketh the father and the mother of the damsel, and them that were with him, and entereth in where the damsel was lying. And he took the damsel by the hand, and said unto her, Talitha-cumi: which is, being interpreted, Damsel, (I say unto thee) arise. And her spirit came again, and straightway she arose, and walked; and her parents were astonished with a great astonishment. And he charged them

straitly that they should tell no man what was done, and commanded that something should be given her to eat

§ 48. TWO BLIND MEN HEALED.

Capernaum.

Matt. 9: 27-31.

And when Jesus departed thence, two blind men followed him, crying, and saying, *Thou* son of David, have mercy on us. And when he was come into the house, the blind men came to him: and Jesus saith unto them, Believe ye that I am able to do this? They said unto him, Yea, Lord. Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith, be it unto you. And their eyes were opened; and Jesus straitly charged them, saying, See *that* no man know *it*. But they, when they were departed, spread abroad his fame in all that country.

§ 49. A DUMB SPIRIT CAST OUT.

Capernaum.

Matt. 9: 32-34.

As they went out, behold, they brought to him a dumb man possessed with a devil. And when the devil was cast out, the dumb spake: and the multitudes marvelled, saying, It was never so seen in Israel. But the Pharisees said, He casteth out devils, through the prince of the devils.

CHAPTER IV.

FROM THE SECOND PASSOVER DURING
CHRIST'S PUBLIC MINISTRY UNTIL
THE THIRD.

Time, One Year.

§ 50. JESUS ATTENDS THE PASSOVER AT JERUSALEM
AND HEALS THE IMPOTENT MAN AT THE POOL
OF BETHESDA, ON THE SABBATH.

John 5:1-14.

After this there was a feast of the Jews: and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. Now there is at Jerusalem, by the sheep *market*, a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue, Bethesda, having five porches. In these lay a great multitude of impotent folk, of blind, halt, withered, waiting for the moving of the water. For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in, was made whole of whatsoever disease he had. And a certain man was there, which had an infirmity thirty and eight years. When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time *in that case*, he saith unto him, Wilt thou be made whole? The impotent man

answered him, Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool: but while I am coming, another steppeth down before me. Jesus saith unto him, Rise, take up thy bed, and walk. And immediately the man was made whole, and took up his bed, and walked: and on the same day was the sabbath.

The Jews therefore said unto him that was cured, It is the sabbath-day; it is not lawful for thee to carry *thy* bed. He answered them, He that made me whole, the same said unto me, Take up thy bed, and walk. Then asked they him, What man is that which said unto thee, Take up thy bed, and walk? And he that was healed wist not who it was: for Jesus had conveyed himself away, a multitude being in *that* place. Afterward Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sin no more, lest a worse thing come unto thee.

§ 51. THE JEWS PERSECUTE JESUS—JESUS VINDICATES HIS WORK, AND ANNOUNCES HIMSELF
AS THE SON OF GOD.

Jerusalem.

John 5: 15-47.

The man departed, and told the Jews that it was Jesus which had made him whole. And therefore did the Jews persecute Jesus, and sought to slay him, because he had done these things on the sabbath-day.

But Jesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I work. Therefore the Jews sought the more to kill him, because he not only had broken the sabbath, but said also, that God was his Father, mak-

ing himself equal with God. Then answered Jesus, and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise. For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all things that himself doeth: and he will shew him greater works than these, that ye may marvel. For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth *them*; even so the Son quickeneth whom he will. For the Father judgeth no man; but hath committed all judgment unto the Son: That all *men* should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son, honoureth not the Father which hath sent him. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life. Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live. For as the Father hath life in himself, so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself; and hath given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man. Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.

I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which

hath sent me. If I bear witness of myself my witness is not true.

There is another that beareth witness of me, and I know that the witness which he witnesseth of me is true. Ye sent unto John, and he bare witness unto the truth. But I receive not testimony from man: but these things I say, that ye might be saved. He was a burning and a shining light: and ye were willing for a season to rejoice in his light.

But I have greater witness than *that* of John: for the works which the Father hath given me to finish, the same works that I do, bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me. And the Father himself which hath sent me, hath borne witness of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his shape. And ye have not his word abiding in you: for whom he hath sent, him ye believe not.

Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: And they are they which testify of me. And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life. I receive not honour from men. But I know you, that ye have not the love of God in you. I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive. How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that *cometh* from God only? Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is *one* that accuseth you, *even* Moses, in whom ye trust. For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me: for he wrote of me. But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?

§ 52. THE DISCIPLES, ON THEIR WAY TO GALILEE,
PLUCK EARS OF GRAIN, ON THE SABBATH.*

Matt. 12: 1-8. Mark 2: 23-28. Luke 6: 1-5.

And it came to pass on the second sabbath after the first, that Jesus went through the corn, and his disciples were an hungered, and plucked the ears of corn, and did eat, rubbing *them* in *their* hands. And certain of the Pharisees saw it, and said unto them, Why do ye that which is not lawful to do on the sabbath-days? And Jesus answering them, said, Have ye not read so much as this, what David did, when himself was an hungered, and they which were with him; how he went into the house of God, in the days of Abiathar the high priest, and did take and eat the shew-bread, and gave also to them that were with him, which was not lawful for him to eat, neither for them which were with him, but only for the priests? Or have ye not read in the law how that on the sabbath-days the priests in the temple profane the sabbath, and are blameless? But I say unto you, that in this place is *one* greater than the temple. But if ye had known what *this* meaneth,

I will have mercy, and not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltless. And he said unto them, The sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath: therefore, the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

§ 53. JESUS HEALS A WITHERED HAND ON THE
SABBATH

Galilee.

Matt. 12: 9-14. Mark 3: 1-6. Luke 6: 6-11.

And when he was departed thence, he went again
6-D*

on another sabbath-day into their synagogue, and taught: and there was a man whose right hand was withered. And the scribes and Pharisees watched him, whether he would heal on the sabbath-day; that they might find an accusation against him. And they asked him, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath-days?

But he knew their thoughts, and said to the man which had the withered hand, Rise up, and stand forth in the midst. And he arose, and stood forth. Then said Jesus unto them, I will ask you one thing: Is it lawful on the sabbath-days to do good, or to do evil? to save life, or to kill? but they held their peace.

And he said unto them, What man shall there be among you, that shall have one sheep, and if it fall into a pit on the sabbath-day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift *it* out? How much then is a man better than a sheep? Wherefore it is lawful to do well on the sabbath-days.

And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieved for the hardness of their hearts, he saith unto the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched *it* out: and his hand was restored whole as the other. And the Pharisees were filled with madness; and communed one with another what they might do to Jesus, and went forth, and straightway took counsel with the Herodians against him, how they might destroy him.

§ 54. JESUS WITHDRAWS TO THE SEA OF GALILEE
—HEALS MANY.

Matt. 12: 15-21. Mark 3: 7-12.

But when Jesus knew *it*, he withdrew himself from

thence with his disciples to the sea: and a great multitude from Galilee followed him, and from Judea, and from Jerusalem, and from Idumea, and *from* beyond Jordan, and they about Tyre and Sidon, a great multitude, when they had heard what great things he did, came unto him. And he spake to his disciples, that a small ship should wait on him, because of the multitude, lest they should throng him. For he had healed many; insomuch that they pressed upon him for to touch him, as many as had plagues. And unclean spirits, when they saw him, fell down before him, and cried, saying, Thou art the Son of God. And he healed them all; and charged them that they should not make him known: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying,

Behold my servant, whom I have chosen,
 My beloved, in whom my soul is well pleased:
 I will put my spirit upon him,
 And he shall shew judgment to the Gentiles.
 He shall not strive, nor cry;
 Neither shall any man hear his voice in the streets.
 A bruised reed shall he not break,
 And smoking flax shall he not quench,
 Till he send forth judgment unto victory.
 And in his name shall the Gentiles trust.

§ 55. JESUS CONTINUES ALL NIGHT IN PRAYER—
 SELECTS TWELVE APOSTLES.

A Mountain near Capernaum.

Mark 3: 13-19. Luke 6: 12-16.

And it came to pass in those days, that he went out into a mountain to pray, and continued all night in prayer to God.

And when it was day, he called *unto him* his disciples: and they came unto him, and of them he chose twelve, whom also he named apostles; and he ordained them that they should be with him, and that he might send them forth to preach, and to have power to heal sicknesses, and to cast out devils. And Simon he surnamed Peter, and Andrew his brother, and James the *son* of Zebedee, and John the brother of James, (and he surnamed them Boanerges, which is, The sons of thunder,) and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, the publican, and Thomas, and James the *son* of Alpheus, and Judas *the brother* of James, called Lebbeus and Thaddeus, and Simon the Canaanite, called Zelotes, and Judas Iscariot, which also betrayed him.

§ 56. SERMON ON THE PLAIN.

Near Capernaum.

Luke 6: 17-49. See Sermon on the Mount, § 42.

And he came down with them, and stood in the plain; and the company of his disciples, and a great multitude of people out of all Judea and Jerusalem, and from the sea-coast of Tyre and Sidon, which came to hear him, and to be healed of their diseases; and they that were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were healed. And the whole multitude sought to touch him; for there went virtue out of him, and healed *them* all.

And he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and said, Blessed *be ye* poor; for yours is the kingdom of God.

Blessed *are ye* that hunger now: for ye shall be filled.

Blessed *are ye* that weep now: for ye shall laugh.

Blessed are ye when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you *from their company*, and shall reproach *you*, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of man's sake.

Rejoice ye in that day, and leap for joy: for behold, your reward *is* great in heaven: for in the like manner did their fathers unto the prophets.

But wo unto you that are rich! for ye have received your consolation.

Wo unto you that are full! for ye shall hunger.

Wo unto you that laugh now! for ye shall mourn and weep.

Wo unto you, when all men shall speak well of you! for so did their fathers to the false prophets.

But I say unto you which hear, Love your enemies, do good to them which hate you, bless them that curse you, and pray for them which despitefully use you. And unto him that smiteth thee on the *one* cheek, offer also the other; and him that taketh away thy cloak, forbid not *to take thy* coat also.

Give to every man that asketh of thee; and of him that taketh away thy goods, ask *them* not again.

And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise. For if ye love them which love you, what thank have ye? for sinners also love those that love them. And if ye do good to them which do good to you, what thank have ye? for sinners also do even the same. And if ye lend *to them* of whom ye hope to receive, what thank have ye? for sinners also lend to sinners, to receive as much again. But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for noth-

ing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto the unthankful and *to* the evil. Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful.

Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven: give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal, it shall be measured to you again.

And he spake a parable unto them: Can the blind lead the blind? shall they not both fall into the ditch? The disciple is not above his master: but every one that is perfect, shall be as his master. And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but perceivest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Either how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou thyself beholdest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beam out of thine own eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to pull out the mote that is in thy brother's eye.

For a good tree bringeth not forth corrupt fruit; neither doth a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. For every tree is known by his own fruit: for of thorns men do not gather figs, nor of a bramble-bush gather they grapes. A good man out of the good treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is good; and an evil man out of the evil treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is evil: for of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh.

And why call ye me Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say? Whosoever cometh to me, and heareth my sayings, and doeth them, I will shew you to whom he is like. He is like a man which built an house, and digged deep, and laid the foundation on a rock: and when the flood arose, the stream beat vehemently upon that house, and could not shake it: for it was founded upon a rock. But he that heareth and doeth not, is like a man that without a foundation built an house upon the earth, against which the stream did beat vehemently, and immediately it fell, and the ruin of that house was great.

§ 57. JESUS HEALS A CENTURION'S SERVANT.

Capernaum.

Matt. 8:5-13. Luke 7:1-10.

Now, when Jesus had ended all his sayings in the audience of the people, he entered into Capernaum. And a certain centurion's servant, who was dear unto him, was at home sick of the palsy, grievously tormented, sick, and ready to die. And when he heard of Jesus, he sent unto him the elders of the Jews, beseeching him that he would come and heal his servant. And when they came to Jesus, they besought him instantly, saying, That he was worthy for whom he should do this: for he loveth our nation, and he hath built us a synagogue. Then Jesus went with them. And when he was now not far from the house, the centurion sent friends to him, saying unto him, Lord, trouble not thyself: for I am not worthy that thou shouldest enter under my roof; wherefore neither thought I myself worthy to come unto thee; but speak

the word only and my servant shall be healed. For I also am a man set under authority, having under me soldiers, and I say unto one, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth *it*. When Jesus heard these things, he marvelled at him, and turned him about and said unto the people that followed him, I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel. And I say unto you, That many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven: but the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way; and as thou hast believed, *so* be it done unto thee. And his servant was healed in the self-same hour. And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the servant whole that had been sick.

§ 58. JESUS RAISES A WIDOW'S SON AT NAIN.

Luke 7: 11-17.

And it came to pass the day after, that he went into a city called Nain: and many of his disciples went with him, and much people. Now when he came nigh to the gate of the city, behold, there was a dead man carried out, the only son of his mother, and she was a widow: and much people of the city was with her. And when the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and said unto her, Weep not. And he came and touched the bier: and they that bare *him* stood still. And he said, Young man, I say unto thee, Arise. And he that was dead sat up, and began to

speak: and he delivered him to his mother. And there came a fear on all: and they glorified God, saying, That a great prophet is risen up among us; and, That God hath visited his people. And this rumour of him went forth throughout all Judea, and throughout all the region round about.

§ 59. JOHN THE BAPTIST IN PRISON—SENDS TWO OF HIS DISCIPLES TO JESUS IN GALILEE, NEAR NAIN.¹

Matt. 11: 2-19. Luke 7: 18-35.

And the disciples of John shewed him of all these things. Now when John had heard in the prison the works of Christ, he, calling *unto him* two of his disciples, sent *them* to Jesus, saying, Art thou he that should come? or look we for another? When the men were come unto him, they said, John Baptist hath sent us unto thee, saying, Art thou he that should come? or look we for another? And in that same hour he cured many of *their* infirmities, and plagues, and of evil spirits; and unto many *that were* blind he gave sight. Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and shew John again those things which ye do hear and see: the blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor have the gospel preached to them. And blessed is *he* whosoever shall not be offended in me.

And when the messengers of John were departed, he began to speak unto the people concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness for to see? A reed shaken with the wind? But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold,

they which are gorgeously apparelled, and live delicately, are in kings' courts. But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? Yea, I say unto you, and much more than a prophet. This is *he*, of whom it is written,

Behold, I send my messenger before thy face,
Which shall prepare thy way before thee.

Verily I say unto you, Among them that are born of women, there hath not risen a greater prophet than John the Baptist: notwithstanding, he that is least in the kingdom of heaven, is greater than he. And from the days of John the Baptist, until now, the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force. For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John. And if ye will receive *it*, this is Elias which was for to come. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear. And all the people that heard *him*, and the publicans, justified God, being baptized with the baptism of John. But the Pharisees and lawyers rejected the counsel of God against themselves, being not baptized of him.

And the Lord said, Whereunto then shall I liken the men of this generation? and to what are they like? They are like unto children sitting in the market-place, and calling one to another, and saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced; we have mourned to you, and ye have not wept. For John the Baptist came neither eating bread, nor drinking wine; and ye say, He hath a devil. The Son of man is come eating and drinking; and ye say, Behold a gluttonous man, and a wine-bibber, a friend of publicans and sinners! But Wisdom is justified of all her children.

§ 60. JESUS DENOUNCES CHORAZIN, BETHSAIDA AND CAPERNAUM, AND INVITES ALL, PROMISING AN EASY YOKE AND A LIGHT BURDEN.

Nain.

Matt. 11 : 20-30.

Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they repented not. Wo unto thee, Chorazin! wo unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works which were done in you had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. But I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgment, than for you. And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day. But I say unto you, That it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom, in the day of judgment than for thee.

At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes. Even so, Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight. All things are delivered unto me of my Father; and no man knoweth the Son, but the Father, neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and *he* to whomsoever the Son will reveal *him*.

Come unto me, all *ye* that labour, and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me: for I am meek and lowly in

heart; and ye shall find rest unto your souls. For my yoke *is* easy, and my burden is light.

§ 61. WHILE EATING WITH SIMON, THE PHARISEE, JESUS IS ANNOINTED BY A PENITENT WOMAN.

Some Village of Galilee.

Luke 7: 36-50.

And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him. And he went into the Pharisee's house, and sat down to meat. And behold, a woman in the city, which was a sinner, when she knew that *Jesus* sat at meat in the Pharisee's house, brought an alabaster-box of ointment, and stood at his feet behind *him* weeping, and began to wash his feet with tears, and did wipe *them* with the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed *them* with the ointment. Now when the Pharisee which had bidden him, saw *it*, he spake within himself, saying, This man, if he were a prophet, would have known who, and what manner of woman *this is* that toucheth him: for she is a sinner. And Jesus answering, said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee. And he saith, Master, say on. There was a certain creditor, which had two debtors: the one owed five hundred pence, and the other fifty. And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. Tell me therefore, which of them will love him most? Simon answered and said, I suppose that *he*, to whom he forgave most. And he said unto him, Thou hast rightly judged. And he turned to the woman, and said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entered into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath washed my feet with tears, and wiped *them* with the

hairs of her head. Thou gavest me no kiss: but this woman, since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kiss my feet. Mine head with oil thou didst not anoint: but this woman hath anointed my feet with ointment. Wherefore, I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven; for she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, *the same* loveth little. And he said unto her, Thy sins are forgiven. And they that sat at meat with him, began to say within themselves, Who is this that forgiveth sins also? And he said to the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace.

§ 62. JESUS AND THE TWELVE MAKE A SECOND
CIRCUIT IN GALILEE.

Luke 8: 1-3.

And it came to pass afterward, that he went throughout every city and village, preaching and shewing the glad tidings of the kingdom of God: and the twelve *were* with him, and certain women, which had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene, out of whom went seven devils, and Joanna the wife of Chuza, Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others, which ministered unto him of their substance.

§ 63. THE BLIND AND DUMB DEMONIAK HEALED—
THE SCRIBES AND PHARISEES SAY OF JESUS "HE
HATH BEELZEBUB"—OF BLASPHEMY—THE
TREE IS KNOWN BY HIS FRUIT.

Probably Capernaum.

Matt. 12: 22-37. Mark 3: 19-30.

And they went into a house, and the multitude

cometh together again, so that they could not so much as eat bread. And when his friends heard *of it*, they went out to lay hold on him: for they said, He is beside himself. Then was brought unto him one possessed with a devil, blind and dumb; and he healed him, insomuch that the blind and dumb both spake and saw. And all the people were amazed, and said, Is not this the son of David? But when the Pharisees and the scribes which came down from Jerusalem, heard *it*, they said, This *fellow* hath Beelzebub, and by the prince of the devils casteth he out devils. And Jesus knew their thoughts, and he called them *unto him*, and said unto them in parables, Every kingdom divided against itself, is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself, shall not stand. And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom stand? And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast *them* out? therefore they shall be your judges. But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come unto you. Or else, how can one enter into a strong man's house, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong man? and then he will spoil his house. He that is not with me, is against me; and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth abroad.

Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy wherewithsoever they shall blaspheme shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy *against* the *Holy* Ghost shall never be forgiven unto men. And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against

the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the *world* to come, but he is in danger of eternal damnation: because they said, He hath an unclean spirit.

Either make the tree good, and his fruit good; or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by *his* fruit. O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things? for out of the abundance of the heart, the mouth speaketh. A good man, out of the good treasure of the heart, bringeth forth good things: and an evil man, out of the evil treasure, bringeth forth evil things. But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment. For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

§ 64. THE SCRIBES AND PHARISEES SEEK A SIGN—
JESUS ANSWERS THEM.

Probably Capernaum.

Matt. 12: 38-45.

Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee. But he answered and said to them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign, and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas. For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly: so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and behold, a greater than

Jonas *is* here. The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: for she came from the uttermost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold, a greater than Solomon *is* here.

When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest, and findeth none. Then he saith, I will return into my house from whence I came out; and when he is come, he findeth *it* empty, swept, and garnished. Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter in and dwell there: and the last *state* of that man is worse than the first. Even so shall it be also unto this wicked generation.

§ 65. CHRIST'S MOTHER AND BRETHREN.

Probably Capernaum.

Matt. 12:46-50. Mark 3:31-35. Luke 8:19-21.

While he yet talked to the people, behold, *his* mother and his brethren stood without, desiring to speak with him, and they could not come at him for the press of the multitude that sat about him, and sent unto him calling him. Then one said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to speak with thee. But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother? and who are my brethren? And he stretched forth his hand toward his disciples, and said, Behold my mother, and my brethren! They are these which hear the word of God, and do it. For whosoever shall do the will of God, my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

§ 66. JESUS TEACHES BY THE SEA SIDE—PARABLE
OF THE SOWER.*Sea of Galilee, near Capernaum.*

Matt. 13: 1-23. Mark 4: 1-25. Luke 8: 4-18.

The same day went Jesus out of the house, and sat by the sea-side. And great multitudes were gathered together unto him, so that he went into a ship, and sat; and the whole multitude stood on the shore. And he taught them many things by parables, and said unto them in his doctrine, Hearken; Behold, there went out a sower to sow his seed; and it came to pass as he sowed, some fell by the way-side, and it was trodden down, and the fowls of the air came and devoured it up. And some fell on stony ground, where it had not much earth; and immediately it sprang up, because it had no depth of earth: but when the sun was up, it was scorched; and because it had no root and lacked moisture it withered away. And some fell among thorns, and the thorns grew up with it and choked it, and it yielded no fruit. And other fell on good ground, and did yield fruit that sprang up, and increased, and brought forth, some thirty, and some sixty, and some an hundred fold. And when he had said these things, he cried, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear. And when he was alone, they that were about him, with the twelve, asked and said unto him, Why speakest thou unto them in parables? He answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given, for unto them that are without all these things are done in parables. For

whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that he hath. Therefore speak I to them in parables: because they seeing, see not; and hearing, they hear not; neither do they understand. And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Esaias, which saith,

By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand;
And seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive:
For this people's heart is waxed gross,
And *their* ears are dull of hearing,
And their eyes they have closed;
Lest at any time they should see with *their* eyes,
And hear with *their* ears,
And should understand with *their* heart,
And should be converted, and I should heal them,
And their sins should be forgiven them.

But blessed *are* your eyes, for they see: and your ears, for they hear. For verily I say unto you, That many prophets and righteous *men* have desired to see *those things* which ye see, and have not seen *them*; and to hear *those things* which ye hear, and have not heard *them*. And he said unto them, Know ye not this parable? and how then will ye know all parables?

Hear ye therefore the parable of the sower. The sower soweth the word of God. When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth *it* not, then cometh the devil immediately, and catcheth away the word that was sown in his heart, lest he should believe and be saved. This is he which received seed by the way-side. But he that received the seed into stony places, the same is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it; yet hath he not root in

himself, so he endureth but for a while, and in time of temptation falleth away, for when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, immediately he is offended. He also that received seed among the thorns is he that heareth the word, and the cares of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, the pleasures of life, and the lusts of other things entering in, choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful. But he that received seed into the good ground is he that heareth the word and understandeth it, and in an honest and good heart keepeth it, which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some thirty, some sixty, and some an hundred fold.

And he said unto them, No man, when he hath lighted a candle, covereth it with a vessel, or putteth *it* under a bed; but setteth *it* on a candlestick, that they which enter in may see the light. For there is nothing hid, which shall not be manifested; neither was any thing kept secret, but that it should come abroad. If any man have ears to hear, let him hear. Take heed therefore how ye hear and what ye hear: With what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you: and unto you that hear, shall more be given. For he that hath, to him shall be given: and he that hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he seemeth to have.

§ 67. PARABLES SPOKEN TO THE MULTITUDE.

Sea of Galilee, Probably near Capernaum.

OF TARES.

Matt. 13: 24-30.

Another parable put he forth unto them, saying,

The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field: but while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way. But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also. So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares? He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up? But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them. Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.

THE SEED GROWING SECRETLY.

Mark 4: 26-29.

And he said, So is the kingdom of God, as if a man should cast seed into the ground; and should sleep, and rise night and day, and the seed should spring and grow up, he knoweth not how. For the earth bringeth forth fruit of herself; first the blade, then the ear, after that the full corn in the ear. But when the fruit is brought forth, immediately he putteth in the sickle, because the harvest is come.

THE GRAIN OF MUSTARD.

Matt. 13: 31-32. Mark 4: 30-32.

Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, Whereunto shall we liken the kingdom of God? or with what comparison shall we compare it? The

kingdom of heaven is like to a grain of mustard-seed, which a man took, and sowed in his field: which indeed is the least of all seeds: but when it is grown, it is the greatest among herbs, and becometh a tree and shooteth out great branches, so that the birds of the air come and lodge under the shadow of it or in the branches thereof.

THE LEAVEN.

Matt. 13: 33.

Another parable spake he unto them; The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took, and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

Matt. 13: 34-35. Mark 4: 33-34.

All these things spake Jesus unto the multitude in parables; and with many such parables spake he the word unto them, as they were able to hear *it*. But without a parable spake he not unto them: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying,

I will open my mouth in parables;
I will utter things which have been kept secret
From the foundation of the world.

And when they were alone, he expounded all things to his disciples.

§ 68. JESUS EXPLAINS THE TARES AND SPEAKS
OTHER PARABLES TO HIS DISCIPLES.

Probably Capernaum.

Matt. 13: 36-53.

Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into

the house: and his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field. He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man; the field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked *one*; the enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels. As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world. The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity; and shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field; the which when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant-man seeking goodly pearls: who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it.

Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net, that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind: which, when it was full, they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away. So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just, and shall cast them into the furnace of

fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. Jesus saith unto them, Have ye understood all these things? They say unto him, Yea, Lord. Then said he unto them, Therefore every scribe *which* is instructed unto the kingdom of heaven, is like unto a man *that* is an householder, which bringeth forth out of his treasure *things* new and old.

And it came to pass, *that* when Jesus had finished these parables, he departed thence.

§ 69. JESUS AND THE DISCIPLES CROSS THE SEA OF GALILEE—THE TEMPEST STILLED.

Matt. 8: 18, 23-27. Mark 4: 35-41. Luke 8: 22-25.

Now it came to pass on the same day when Jesus saw great multitudes about him, and even was come, he said to his disciples, Let us go over unto the other side of the lake. And when they had sent away the multitude, he entered into a ship with his disciples and they launched forth. And there were also with him other little ships. But as they sailed, he fell asleep on a pillow in the hinder part of the ship. And there arose a great storm of wind on the sea, insomuch that the ship was covered with the waves, which beat into the ship, so that it was filled and in jeopardy. And his disciples came to *him*, and awoke him, saying, Lord, save us: we perish. Master, Master, we perish. And he saith unto them, Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith? Then he arose, and rebuked the winds and the raging of the water: and said unto the sea, Peace, be still, and they ceased, and there was a great calm. And he said unto them, Why are ye so fearful? how is

it that ye have no faith? And they feared exceedingly, and wondered, saying one to another, What manner of man is this! for he commandeth even the winds and water, and they obey him.

§ 70. THE TWO DEMONIACS OF GADARA HEALED—
HERD OF SWINE DESTROYED—JESUS RETURNS
TO THE WEST SIDE OF THE LAKE.

Gadara was Probably on the East Shore of Galilee

Matt. 8: 28-9: 1. Mark 5: 1-21. Luke 8: 26-40.

And when he was come to the other side, into the country of the Gergesenes, (or Gadarenes,) which is over against Galilee. And when he went forth to land, immediately there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way, and one of them which had devils long time, and ware no clothes, neither abode in *any* house, but had *his* dwelling among the tombs; and no man could bind him, no, not with chains: because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains, and the chains had been plucked asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces: and he was oftentimes driven of the devil into the wilderness: neither could any *man* tame him. And always, night and day, he was in the mountains, and in the tombs, crying, and cutting himself with stones. But when he saw Jesus afar off, he ran and fell down before him, and worshipped him, and cried with a loud voice, and said, What have I to do with thee, Jesus, *thou* Son of the Most High God? Art thou come hither to torment us before the time? I adjure (I beseech—Luke.) thee by God, that thou torment me

not. (For he had said unto him, Come out of the man, *thou* unclean spirit.) And Jesus asked him, saying, What is thy name? And he answered, saying, My name *is* Legion: for we are many; because many devils were entered into him. And they besought him, that he would not send them away out of the country, nor command them to go out into the deep. And there was a good way off from them, on the mountain, an herd of many swine, feeding. So all the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away that we may enter into the herd of swine. And he said unto them, Go. Then went the devils out of the man, and entered into the herd of swine: and behold, the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea, (there were about two thousand,) and perished in the waters. And they that fed the swine when they saw what was done, fled, and told in the city, and in the country, every thing; and what was befallen to the possessed of the devils. And behold, the whole city came out to meet Jesus: and found the man out of whom the devils were departed, sitting at the feet of Jesus, clothed, and in his right mind: and they were afraid. And they also which saw *it*, told them by what means he that was possessed of the devils was healed, and *also* concerning the swine.

Then the whole multitude of the country of the Gadarenes round about, besought him to depart from them, out of their coasts, for they were taken with great fear. And when Jesus was come into the ship, he that had been possessed with the devil prayed him that he might be with him. Howbeit Jesus suffered

him not, but saith unto him, Go home to thy friends, and tell them how great things the Lord hath done for thee, and hath had compassion on thee. And he departed, and began to publish in Decapolis how great things Jesus had done for him. And all *men* did marvel. And when Jesus was passed over again by ship unto the other side, and came into his own city, the people *gladly* received him: for they were all waiting for him, and much people gathered unto him: and he was nigh unto the sea.

§ 71. JESUS AGAIN VISITS NAZARETH AND IS AGAIN REJECTED.

Matt. 13: 54-58. · Mark 6: 1-6.

And he went out from thence, and came into his own country; and his disciples follow him. And when the sabbath-day was come, he began to teach in the synagogue: and many hearing *him* were astonished, saying, From whence hath this *man* these things? and what wisdom *is* this which is given unto him, that even such mighty works are wrought by his hands? Is not this the carpenter, (the carpenter's son—Matt.) the son of Mary, the brother of James, and Joses, and of Juda, and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us? Whence then hath this man all these things? And they were offended at him. But Jesus said unto them, A prophet is not without honour, but in his own country, and among his own kin, and in his own house. And he could (did—Matt.) there do no mighty work, save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and healed *them*. And he marvelled because of their unbelief.

§ 72. THIRD CIRCUIT IN GALILEE.

Matt. 9: 35-38. Mark 6: 6.

And Jesus went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every sickness, and every disease among the people.

But when he saw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion on them, because they fainted, and were scattered abroad, as sheep having no shepherd. Then saith he unto his disciples, The harvest truly *is* plenteous, but the labourers *are* few. Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth labourers into his harvest.

§ 73. THE TWELVE ENDOWED WITH MIRACULOUS POWER, INSTRUCTED AND SENT FORTH BY TWOS.

Galilee.

Matt. 10: 1 to 11: 1. Mark 6: 7-13. Luke 9. 1-6.

Then he called his twelve disciples together, and gave them power and authority over all devils, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness, and all manner of disease. And he sent them forth by two and two; to preach the kingdom of God, and to heal the sick. Now the names of the twelve apostles are these; The first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother; James *the son* of Zebedee, and John his brother; Philip, and Bartholomew; Thomas, and Matthew the publican; James *the son* of Alpheus, and Judas, the brother of James, called Lebbeus, whose surname was Thaddeus; Simon Zelotes, the Canaanite, and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him. These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them,

saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into *any* city of the Samaritans enter ye not. But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand. Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received, freely give.

And commanded them that they should take nothing for *their* journey, save a staff only; provide neither gold, nor silver, nor brass in your purses; nor scrip for *your* journey, no bread, neither two coats, neither shoes, nor yet staves: (for the workman is worthy of his meat.) And into whatsoever city or town ye shall enter, inquire who in it is worthy; and there abide till ye go thence. And when ye come into an house, salute it. And if the house be worthy let your peace come upon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace return to you. And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words, when ye depart out of that house, or city, shake off the dust of your feet for a testimony against them. Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrah, in the day of judgment, than for that city.

Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves. But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will scourge you in their synagogues. And ye shall be brought before governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles. But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak, for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye

shall speak. For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you. And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the child: and the children shall rise up against *their* parents, and cause them to be put to death. And ye shall be hated of all *men* for my name's sake: but he that endureth to the end shall be saved. But when they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another: for verily I say unto you, Ye shall not have gone over the cities of Israel till the Son of man be come. The disciple is not above *his* master, nor the servant above his lord. It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord: if they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more *shall they call* them of his household? Fear them not therefore: for there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; and hid, that shall not be known. What I tell you in darkness, *that* speak ye in light: and what ye hear in the ear, *that* preach ye upon the house-tops. And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell. Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? and one of them shall not fall on the ground without your Father. But the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear ye not therefore, ye are of more value than many sparrows. Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven. But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven. Think not that I am come to send peace on earth; I came not to send peace, but

a sword. For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law. And a man's foes *shall be* they of his own household. He that loveth father or mother more than me, is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me, is not worthy of me. And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me. He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake, shall find it.

He that receiveth you, receiveth me; and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me. He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet, shall receive a prophet's reward; and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man, shall receive a righteous man's reward. And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones, a cup of cold *water* only, in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward.

And it came to pass when Jesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and to preach in their cities. And they departed, and went through the towns, preaching the gospel, that men should repent. And they cast out many devils, and anointed with oil many that were sick, and healed every where.

§ 74. HEROD'S OPINION OF JESUS.

Matt. 14: 1-12. Mark 6: 14-29. Luke 9: 7-9.

At that time Herod the Tetrarch heard of the fame of Jesus, and of all that was done by him: (for his name was spread abroad.) And Herod said, John the

Baptist have I beheaded; but who is this of whom I hear such things? And he desired to see him, and he was perplexed, because that it was said of some, that John was risen from the dead; and of some, that Elias had appeared; and of others, that one of the old prophets was risen again, or as one of the prophets. But when Herod heard *thereof*, he said unto his servants, It is John, whom I beheaded: he is risen from the dead, and therefore mighty works do shew forth themselves in him.

For Herod himself had sent forth and laid hold upon John, and bound him in prison for Herodias' sake, his brother Philip's wife: for he had married her. For John had said unto Herod, It is not lawful for thee to have thy brother's wife. Therefore Herodias had a quarrel against him, and would have killed him; but she could not: for Herod, when he would have put him to death, feared the multitude, because they counted him as a prophet, and he feared John, knowing that he was a just man and an holy, and observed him: and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly.

And when a convenient day was come, that Herod on his birthday made a supper to his lords, high captains, and chief *estates* of Galilee; and when the daughter of the said Herodias came in, and danced, and pleased Herod, and them that sat with him, the king said unto the damsel, Ask of me whatsoever thou wilt, and I will give *it* thee. And he sware unto her, Whatsoever thou shalt ask of me, I will give *it* thee, unto the half of my kingdom. And she went forth and said unto her mother, What shall I ask? And she

said, The head of John the Baptist. And she came in straightway with haste unto the king, and asked, saying, I will that thou give me, by and by, in a charger, the head of John the Baptist. And the king was exceeding sorry; *yet* for his oath's sake, and for their sakes which sat with him, he would not reject her. And immediately the king sent an executioner, and commanded his head to be brought: and he went and beheaded him in the prison; and brought his head in a charger, and gave it to the damsel; and the damsel gave it to her mother. And when his disciples heard *of it*, they came and took up his corpse, and laid it in a tomb, and went and told Jesus.

§ 75. THE TWELVE RETURN TO JESUS—THEY RETIRE
ACROSS THE LAKE—FIVE THOUSAND FED.

Near Bethsaida.

Matt. 14: 13-21. Mark 6: 30-44. Luke 9: 10-17. John 6: 1-14.

And the apostles, when they were returned, gathered themselves together unto Jesus, and told him all things, both what they had done, and what they had taught. And he said unto them, Come ye yourselves apart into a desert place, and rest a while: for there were many coming and going, and they had no leisure so much as to eat.

And he took them and went aside privately by ship over the sea of Galilee, which is the sea of Tiberias, into a desert place apart belonging to the city called Bethsaida. And the people, a great multitude, saw them departing, and many knew him, and followed him, because they saw his miracles which he did on them that were diseased, and ran afoot thither out of

all cities, and outwent them, and came together unto him. And Jesus went up into a mountain, and there he sat with his disciples. And the passover, a feast of the Jews, was nigh. And Jesus, when he came out, saw a great multitude, and was moved with compassion toward them, because they were as sheep not having a shepherd: and he received them, and began to teach them many things, and spake unto them of the kingdom of God, and healed them that had need of healing. And when the day was now far spent, his disciples came unto him, and said, This is a desert place, and now the time *is* far passed: send the multitude away; that they may go into the towns and country round about, and into the villages, and lodge and buy themselves victuals: for they have nothing to eat.

When Jesus then lifted up *his* eyes, and saw a great company come unto him, he saith unto Philip, Whence shall we buy bread that these may eat? (And this he said to prove him: for he himself knew what he would do.) Philip answered him, Two hundred pennyworth of bread is not sufficient for them, that every one of them may take a little. But Jesus said unto them, They need not depart; give ye them to eat. And they say unto him, Shall we go and buy two hundred pennyworth of bread, and give them to eat? He saith unto them, How many loaves have ye? go and see. One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peter's brother, when he knew, saith unto him, There is a lad here, which hath five barley-loaves, and two small fishes: but what are they among so many? (For they were about five thousand men.)

And Jesus said, Bring them hither to me; and he said to his disciples, Make them sit down by fifties in a company, upon the green grass. (Now there was much grass in the place.) And the men sat down in ranks, by hundreds, and by fifties. And Jesus took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and looked up to heaven, and blessed, and brake the loaves, and he distributed to the disciples, and the disciples to them that were sat down; and likewise of the two fishes divided he among them all, as much as they would. And they did all eat, and were filled. When they were filled, he said unto his disciples, Gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing be 'lost. Therefore they gathered *them* together, and filled twelve baskets with the fragments of the five barley-loaves, and of the fishes, which remained over and above unto them that had eaten. And they that had eaten were about five thousand men, beside women and children. Then those men, when they had seen the miracle that Jesus did, said, This is of a truth that Prophet that should come into the world.

§ 76. JESUS WALKS ON THE WATER.

Sea of Galilee.

Matt. 14: 22-36. Mark 6: 45-56. John 6: 15-21.

And straightway Jesus constrained his disciples to get into a ship, and to go before him unto the other side, unto Bethsaida, while he sent the multitudes away.

When Jesus therefore perceived that they would come and take him by force, to make him a king, he sent the multitudes away, and departed again into a

mountain himself alone to pray: and when the evening was come, he was there alone, and his disciples went down unto the sea, and entered into a ship, and went over the sea toward Capernaum. And it was now dark, and Jesus was not come to them. And the sea arose by reason of a great wind that blew, and the ship was now in the midst of the sea, tossed with waves: and he saw them toiling in rowing; for the wind was contrary unto them: and about the fourth watch of the night he cometh unto them, walking upon the sea, and would have passed by them. So when they had rowed about five and twenty or thirty furlongs, they see Jesus walking on the sea, and drawing nigh unto the ship: and they supposed it had been a spirit, and cried out for fear. (For they all saw him, and were troubled.) And immediately he talked with them, and saith unto them, Be of good cheer: it is I; be not afraid. And Peter answered him and said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee on the water. And he said, Come. And when Peter was come down out of the ship, he walked on the water, to go to Jesus. But when he saw the wind boisterous, he was afraid; and beginning to sink, he cried, saying, Lord, save me. And immediately Jesus stretched forth *his* hand, and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt? And when they were come into the ship, the wind ceased, and they were sore amazed in themselves beyond measure, and wondered. For they considered not *the miracle* of the loaves; for their heart was hardened. Then they willingly received him into the ship, and came and worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art

the Son of God. And immediately the ship was at the land of Gennesaret, whither they went, and drew to the shore. And when they were come out of the ship, straightway the men of that place knew him, and ran through the whole region round about, and began to carry about in beds those that were sick, where they heard he was. And whithersoever he entered, into villages, or cities, or country, they laid the sick in the streets, and besought him that they might touch, if it were but the border of his garment: and as many as touched him, were made perfectly whole.

§ 77. JESUS TEACHES IN THE SYNAGOGUE AT
CAPERNAUM.

John 6:22-71.

The day following, when the people which stood on the other side of the sea saw that there was none other boat there, save that one whereinto his disciples were entered, and that Jesus went not with his disciples into the boat, but *that* his disciples were gone away alone; (howbeit there came other boats from Tiberias nigh unto the place where they did eat bread, after that the Lord had given thanks:) When the people therefore saw that Jesus was not there, neither his disciples, they also took shipping, and came to Capernaum, seeking for Jesus. And when they had found him on the other side of the sea, they said unto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither? Jesus answered them and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Ye seek me, not because ye saw the miracles, but because ye did eat of the loaves, and were filled.

Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for

that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the Father sealed. Then said they unto him, What shall we do, that we might work the works of God? Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent. They said therefore unto him, What sign shewest thou then, that we may see, and believe thee? what dost thou work? Our fathers did eat manna in the desert; as it is written, He gave them bread from heaven to eat. Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Moses gave you not that bread from heaven; but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven. For the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the world.

Then said they unto him, Lord, evermore give us this bread. And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me shall never hunger; and he that believeth on me shall never thirst. But I said unto you, That ye also have seen me, and believe not. All that the Father giveth me shall come to me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out. For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me. And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, that of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day. And this is the will of him that sent me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.

The Jews then murmured at him, because he said, I

am the bread which came down from heaven. And they said, Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? how is it then that he saith, I came down from heaven? Jesus therefore answered and said unto them, Murmur not among yourselves. No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day. It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me. Not that any man hath seen the Father, save he which is of God, he hath seen the Father.

Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me hath everlasting life. I am that bread of life. Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead. This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die. I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever: and the bread that I will give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world. The Jews therefore strove among themselves, saying, How can this man give us *his* flesh to eat? Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you. Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day. For my flesh is meat indeed, and my blood is drink indeed. He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him. As the living Father hath sent me, and I live by the Father: so

he that eateth me, even he shall live by me. This is that bread which came down from heaven: not as your fathers did eat manna, and are dead: he that eateth of this bread shall live for ever.

These things said he in the synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.

Many therefore of his disciples, when they had heard *this*, said, This is an hard saying; who can hear it? When Jesus knew in himself that his disciples murmured at it, he said unto them, Doth this offend you? *What* and if ye shall see the Son of man ascend up where he was before? It is the Spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, *they* are spirit, and *they* are life. But there are some of you that believe not. For Jesus knew from the beginning who they were that believed not, and who should betray him. And he said, Therefore said I unto you, that no man can come unto me, except it were given unto him of my Father.

From that *time* many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him.

Then said Jesus unto the twelve, Will ye also go away? Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go? thou hast the words of eternal life. And we believe, and are sure that thou art that Christ, the Son of the living God. Jesus answered them, Have not I chosen you twelve, and one of you is a devil? He spake of Judas Iscariot *the son* of Simon: for he it was that should betray him, being one of the twelve.

CHAPTER V.

FROM THE THIRD PASSOVER DURING
CHRIST'S PUBLIC MINISTRY UNTIL THE
ENSUING FEAST OF TABERNACLES.

Time, Six Months.

§ 78. JESUS CONTINUES IN GALILEE.

John 7:1.

After these things Jesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walk in Jewry, because the Jews sought to kill him.

§ 79. OF UNWASHEN HANDS—TRADITION OF THE
ELDERS.

Capernaum.

Matt. 15: 1-20. Mark 7: 1-23.

Then came together unto Jesus the Pharisees, and certain of the scribes, which came from Jerusalem. And when they saw some of his disciples eat bread with defiled (that is to say, with unwashen) hands, they found fault. For the Pharisees, and all the Jews, except they wash *their* hands oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders. And *when they come* from the market, except they wash, they eat not. And many

other things there be, which they have received to hold, *as* the washing of cups, and pots, and brazen vessels, and tables. Then the Pharisees and scribes asked him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands? He answered and said unto them, Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written,

This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth,
And honoureth me with *their* lips;
But their heart is far from me.
But in vain they do worship me,
Teaching *for* doctrines the commandments of men.

For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, *as* the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do. And he said unto them, Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition. For God commanded and Moses said, Honour thy father and thy mother; and, Whoso curseth father or mother, let him die the death: but ye say, If a man shall say to his father or mother, *It is* Corban, that is to say, a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me: and honour not his father or his mother, *he shall be free*. And ye suffer him no more to do aught for his father or his mother; making the word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye.

And when he had called all the people *unto him*, he said unto them, Hearken unto me every one *of you*, and understand. There is nothing from without a man, that entering into him, can defile him: but the things which come out of the mouth, those are they

that defile the man. If any man have ears to hear, let him hear. Then came his disciples, and said unto him, Knowest thou that the Pharisees were offended after they heard this saying? But he answered and said, Every plant, which my heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be rooted up. Let them alone: they be blind leaders of the blind. And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch.

And when he was entered into the house from the people, Peter said unto him, Declare unto us this parable. And Jesus said, Are ye also yet without understanding? Do not ye yet understand, that whatever entereth in at the mouth from without, into the man, *it* cannot defile him: because it entereth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats? And he said, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man. For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, false witness, pride, foolishness; all these evil things come from within, and defile the man, but to eat with unwashen hands defileth not a man.

§ 80. DAUGHTER OF THE SYROPHENICIAN WOMAN
HEALED.

Coasts of Tyre and Sidon.

Matt. 15: 21-28. Mark 7: 24-30.

And from thence Jesus arose and went into the borders of Tyre and Sidon, and entered into an house, and would have no man know *it*: but he could not be hid. And behold, a woman of Canaan, who was a

Greek, a Syrophenician by nation, whose young daughter had an unclean spirit, heard of him, came out of the same coasts and fell at his feet: and cried unto him, saying, Have mercy on me, O Lord, *thou* son of David; my daughter is grievously vexed with a devil. But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came and besought him, saying, Send her away; for she crieth after us. But he answered and said, I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

Then came she and worshipped him, saying, help me. But Jesus said unto her, Let the children first be filled: for it is not meet to take the children's bread, and to cast *it* unto the dogs. And she answered and said unto him, Yes, truth, Lord: yet the dogs under the table eat of the children's crumbs. Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great *is* thy faith: for this saying, go thy way; be it unto thee even as thou wilt; the devil is gone out of thy daughter. And her daughter was made whole from that very hour. And when she was come to her house, she found the devil gone out, and her daughter laid upon the bed.

§ 81. JESUS HEALS A DEAF AND DUMB MAN AND
MANY OTHERS.

Decapolis.

Matt. 15: 29-31. Mark 7: 31-37.

And again, departing from the coasts of Tyre and Sidon, he came through the midst of the coasts of Decapolis, nigh unto the sea of Galilee; and went up into a mountain, and sat down there. And they bring

unto him one that was deaf, and had an impediment in his speech; and they beseech him to put his hand upon him. And he took him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers into his ears, and he spit, and touched his tongue: and looking up to heaven, he sighed, and saith unto him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened. And straightway his ears were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plain. And he charged them that they should tell no man: but the more he charged them, so much the more a great deal they published *it*; and were beyond measure astonished, saying, He hath done all things well; he maketh both the deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak.

And great multitudes came unto him, having with them *those that were* lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many others, and cast them down at Jesus' feet; and he healed them: insomuch that the multitude wondered, when they saw the dumb to speak, the maimed to be whole, the lame to walk, and the blind to see: and they glorified the God of Israel.

§ 82. JESUS FEEDS FOUR THOUSAND AT DECAPOLIS.

Matt. 15: 32-39. Mark 8: 1-9.

In those days the multitude being very great, and having nothing to eat, Jesus called his disciples *unto him*, and saith unto them, I have compassion on the multitude, because they have now been with me three days, and have nothing to eat: and if I send them away fasting to their own houses, they will faint by the way: for divers of them came from far. And his disciples answered him, From whence can a man satisfy so great a multitude with bread here in the wilderness?

And Jesus saith unto them, How many loaves have ye? And they said, Seven, and a few little fishes. And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the ground, and he took the seven loaves, and gave thanks, and brake, and gave to his disciples to set before *them*; and they did set *them* before the people. And he blessed the few small fishes, and commanded to set them also before *them*. And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up of the broken *meat* that was left seven baskets full. And they that did eat were four thousand men, beside women and children. And he sent away the multitude.

§ 83. THE PHARISEES AND SADDUCEES AGAIN REQUIRE A SIGN.

Near Magdala.

Matt. 15: 39 and 16: 1-4. Mark 8: 10-12.

And straightway he entered into a ship with his disciples, and came into the coasts of Magdala, and into the parts of Dalmanutha. The Pharisees also with the Sadducees came forth, and began to question with him, tempting him, and desired him that he would shew them a sign from heaven. He answered and said unto them, When it is evening, ye say, *It will be* fair weather: for the sky is red. And in the morning, *It will be* foul weather to-day: for the sky is red and lowering. O ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky; but can ye not *discern* the signs of the times? And he sighed deeply in his spirit, and saith, Why doth this generation seek after a sign? A wicked and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and verily I say unto you there shall no sign be given unto it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas.

§ 84. JESUS RETURNS ACROSS THE LAKE AND WARNS
HIS DISCIPLES AGAINST THE LEAVEN OF
THE PHARISEES.

Coast of the Sea of Galilee.

Matt. 16: 4-12. Mark 8: 13-21.

And he left them, and entering into the ship again, departed to the other side.

Now *the disciples* had forgotten to take bread, neither had they in the ship with them more than one loaf.

Then, when they were come to the other side, Jesus said unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees, and of the leaven of Herod. And they reasoned among themselves, saying, *It is* because we have taken no bread.

Which when Jesus perceived, he said unto them, O ye of little faith, why reason ye among yourselves, because ye have brought no bread? Do ye not yet perceive, neither understand? have ye your heart yet hardened? Having eyes, see ye not? and having ears, hear ye not? and do ye not remember? When I brake the five loaves among five thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? They say unto him, Twelve. And when the seven among four thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up? And they said, Seven. And he said unto them, How is it that ye do not understand that I spake *it* not to you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees? Then understood they how that he bade *them* not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.

§ 85. JESUS HEALS A BLIND MAN AT BETHSAIDA.

Mark 8: 22-26.

And he cometh to Bethsaida; and they bring a blind man unto him, and besought him to touch him. And he took the blind man by the hand, and led him out of the town; and when he had spit on his eyes, and put his hands upon him, he asked him if he saw aught. And he looked up, and said, I see men as trees walking. After that, he put *his* hands again upon his eyes, and made him look up: and he was restored, and saw every man clearly. And he sent him away to his house, saying, Neither go into the town, nor tell *it* to any in the town.

§ 86. PETER PROFESSES THAT JESUS IS THE CHRIST.

Vicinity of Cæsarea Philippi.

Matt. 16: 13-20. Mark 8: 27-30. Luke 9: 18-21.

And Jesus went out and his disciples and came into the coasts and towns of Cæsarea Philippi, and it came to pass by the way, as he was alone praying, his disciples were with him and he asked them saying, Whom do men say that I, the Son of man, am? And they said, Some *say that thou art* John the Baptist: some say Elias; and others, Jeremias, or one of the old prophets risen again. He saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am? And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-jona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed *it* unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven. And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church: and

the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven. And he straitly charged them, and commanded *them* to tell no man that he was Jesus the Christ.

§ 87. JESUS FORETELLS HIS DEATH AND RESURRECTION—TEACHES SELF-DENIAL.

Vicinity of Casarea Philippi.

Matt. 16: 21-28. Mark 8: 31 to 9: 1. Luke 9: 22-27.

From that time forth began Jesus to shew unto his disciples, how that he, the Son of man, must go unto Jerusalem, and be rejected and suffer many things of the elders, and chief priests, and scribes, and be killed, and be raised again the third day. And he spake that saying openly. Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be unto thee. But when he had turned about, and looked on his disciples, he rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behind me, Satan; thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men.

And when he had called the people *unto him* with his disciples also, he said unto them, Whosoever will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me. For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospel's, the same shall save it. For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? Or what shall a

man give in exchange for his soul? Whosoever therefore shall be ashamed of me, and of my words, in this adulterous and sinful generation; of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh (For he shall come—Matt.) in his own glory and in the glory of his Father with the holy angels, and then he shall reward every man according to his works. And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That there be some of them that stand here which shall not taste of death till they have seen the (Son of man coming in his kingdom—Matt.) kingdom of God come with power.

§ 88. THE TRANSFIGURATION.

Probably a Mountain in the Region of Cæsarea Philippi.

Matt. 17: 1-13. Mark 9: 2-13. Luke 9: 28-36.

And six days after these sayings Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and leadeth them up into an high mountain apart by themselves, to pray. And as he prayed, he was transfigured before them; the fashion of his countenance was altered, and his face did shine as the sun, and his raiment was white as the light, glistening and shining exceeding white as snow; so as no fuller on earth can white them. And behold, there talked with him two men, which were Moses and Elias: who appeared in glory, and spake of his decease which he should accomplish at Jerusalem. But Peter and they that were with him were heavy with sleep: and when they were awake, they saw his glory, and the two men that stood with him.

And it came to pass, as they departed from him, Peter said unto Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be

here: and if thou wilt let us make three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias: not knowing what he said, for they were sore afraid. While he thus spake, there came a bright cloud, and overshadowed them: and they feared as they entered into the cloud. And there came a voice out of the cloud, saying,

This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased:
hear ye him.

And when the disciples heard *it*, they fell on their face, and were sore afraid. And when the voice was passed Jesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraid. And when they had suddenly lifted up their eyes, they saw no man, save Jesus only with themselves.

And as they came down from the mountain, Jesus charged them, saying, Tell the vision to no man, until the Son of man be risen again from the dead. And they kept that saying close, with themselves, and told no man in those days any of those things which they had seen, questioning one with another what the rising from the dead should mean. And his disciples asked him, saying, Why then say the scribes, that Elias must first come? And Jesus answered and said unto them, Elias truly shall first come, and restore all things. But I say unto you, that Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed: likewise also, as it is written of him, shall the Son of man must suffer many things, and be set at nought of them. Then the disciples understood that he spake unto them of John the Baptist.

§ 89. JESUS HEALS THE DEMONIAK BOY.

Region of Cæsarea Philippi.

Matt. 17: 14-21. Mark 9: 14-29. Luke 9: 37-43.

And it came to pass, that on the next day, when they were come down from the hill, to *his* disciples, he saw a great multitude about them, and the scribes questioning with them. And straightway all the people, when they beheld him, were greatly amazed, and running to *him*, saluted him. And he asked the scribes, What question ye with them?

And one of the multitude came to him kneeling down to him, and saying, Lord, have mercy, I beseech thee, and look upon my son; for he is mine only child, which hath a dumb spirit; for he is lunatic, and sore vexed, for oft-times he falleth into the fire, and oft into the water. And wheresoever he taketh him, he tear-eth him, and bruising him hardly departeth from him; and he suddenly crieth out and foameth and gnasheth with his teeth, and pineth away; and I brought him to thy disciples and besought them that they should cure him, and they could not.

Then Jesus answered and said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? how long shall I suffer you? Bring thy son hither to me. And they brought him unto him: and as he was coming, when he saw him, straightway the spirit threw him and tare him; and he fell on the ground, and wallowed, foaming. And he asked his father, How long is it ago since this came unto him? And he said, Of a child. And oft-times it hath cast him into the fire, and into the waters to destroy him: but if thou canst do any thing, have compassion on us, and help

us. Jesus said unto him, If thou canst believe, all things *are* possible to him that believeth. And straightway the father of the child cried out, and said with tears, Lord, I believe; help thou mine unbelief. When Jesus saw that the people came running together, he rebuked the foul spirit, saying unto him, *Thou* dumb and deaf spirit, I charge thee, come out of him, and enter no more into him. And *the spirit* cried, and rent him sore, and came out of him: and he was as one dead; insomuch that many said, He is dead. But Jesus took him by the hand, and lifted him up, and delivered him again to his father; and the child arose cured from that hour.

And they were all amazed at the mighty power of God.

And when he was come into the house, his disciples asked him privately, Why could not we cast him out? And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard-seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove nence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you. Howbeit, this kind goeth not out, but by prayer and fasting.

§ 90. JESUS AGAIN FORETELLS HIS DEATH AND RESURRECTION.

Galilee.

Matt. 17: 22-23. Mark 9: 30-32. Luke 9: 43-45.

And they departed thence, and passed through Galilee; and he would not that any man should know *it*. And while they abode in Galilee, and while they wondered every one at all things which Jesus did, he

said unto his disciples, Let these sayings sink down into your ears: for the Son of man shall be betrayed into the hands of men: and they shall kill him, and after that he is killed, he shall rise again the third day. And they were exceeding sorry. But they understood not this saying, and it was hid from them, that they perceived it not: and they were afraid to ask him of that saying.

§ 91. MIRACLE TO PROVIDE TRIBUTE-MONEY.

Capernaum.

Matt. 17: 24-27. Mark 9: 33.

And when they were come to Capernaum, they that received tribute-money came to Peter, and said, Doth not your master pay tribute? He saith, Yes. And when he was come into the house, Jesus prevented him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? of whom do the kings of the earth take custom or tribute? of their own children, or of strangers? Peter saith unto him, Of strangers. Jesus saith unto him, Then are the children free. Notwithstanding, lest we should offend them, go thou to the sea, and cast an hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up: and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a piece of money: that take, and give unto them for me and thee.

§ 92. THE DISCIPLES DISPUTE WHO SHALL BE GREATEST—JESUS ANSWERS.

Capernaum.

Matt. 18: 1-14. Mark 9: 33-50. Luke 9: 46-50.

Then there arose a reasoning among them, which of them should be greatest in the kingdom of heaven; and being in the house, he asked them, What was it

that ye disputed among yourselves by the way? But they held their peace: for by the way they had disputed among themselves, who *should be* the greatest. And he sat down, and called the twelve, and the disciples came to him, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven? and he saith unto them, If any man desire to be first, *the same* shall be last of all, and servant of all. And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them, and when he had taken him in his arms, he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven. Whosoever shall receive one of such children in my name, receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me, receiveth not me, but him that sent me. For he that is least among you all, the same shall be great.

And John answered him, saying, Master, we saw one casting out devils in thy name, and he followeth not us; and we forbade him, because he followeth not us. But Jesus said, Forbid him not: for there is no man which shall do a miracle in my name, that can lightly speak evil of me. For he that is not against us, is on our part. For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink in my name, because ye belong to Christ, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward. And whosoever shall offend one of *these* little ones that believe in me, it is better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were drowned in the depth of the sea.

Wo unto the world because of offences! for it must

needs be that offences come; but wo to that man by whom the offence cometh! Wherefore if thy hand offend thee, cut it off: and cast it from thee; it is better for thee to enter into life maimed, than having two hands to go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched: where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off: it is better for thee to enter halt into life, than having two feet to be cast into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched: where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast *it* from thee: it is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, rather than having two eyes, to be cast into hell-fire: where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

For every one shall be salted with fire, and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt. Salt *is* good: but if the salt have lost his saltness, wherewith will ye season it? Have salt in yourselves, and have peace one with another.

Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones: for I say unto you, that in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven. For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost. How think ye? If a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountains, and seeketh that which is gone astray? And if so be that he find it, verily I say unto you, he rejoiceth more of that *sheep*, than of the ninety and nine which went not astray. Even so it is not the will

of your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish.

§ 93. HOW TO DEAL WITH AN OFFENDING BROTHER
—POWER OF UNITED PRAYER—FORGIVE SEV-
ENTY TIMES SEVEN—PARABLE OF THE
UNFORGIVING SERVANT.

Capernaum.

Matt. 18: 15-35.

Moreover, if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. But if he will not hear *thee*, *then* take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell *it* unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican. Verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven.

Again I say unto you, That if two of you shall agree on earth, as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven. For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times? Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven.

Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king which would take account of his servants. And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought

unto him which owed him ten thousand talents. But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt. But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellow-servants, which owed him an hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took *him* by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest. And his fellow-servant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt. So when his fellow-servants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done. Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me: shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy fellow-servant, even as I had pity on thee? And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him. So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.

§ 94. JESUS GOES UP PRIVATELY FROM CAPERNAUM
TO THE FEAST OF TABERNACLES—REJECTED
BY A SAMARITAN VILLAGE.

Luke 9:51-56. John 7:2-10.

Now the Jews' feast of tabernacles was at hand.

His brethren therefore said unto him, Depart hence, and go into Judea, that thy disciples also may see the works that thou doest. For *there is* no man *that* doeth any thing in secret, and he himself seeketh to be known openly. If thou do these things, shew thyself to the world. (For neither did his brethren believe in him.) Then Jesus said unto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is always ready. The world cannot hate you; but me it hateth, because I testify of it, that the works thereof are evil. Go ye up unto this feast: I go not up yet unto this feast; for my time is not yet full come. When he had said these words unto them, he abode *still* in Galilee.

But when his brethren were gone up, and the time was come that he should be received up, he steadfastly set his face to go to Jerusalem, unto the feast, not openly, but as it were in secret. And sent messengers before his face: and they went and entered into a village of the Samaritans, to make ready for him. And they did not receive him, because his face was as though he would go to Jerusalem. And when his disciples James and John saw *this*, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come down from heaven, and consume them, even as Elias did? But he turned, and rebuked them, and said, Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of. For the Son of man is not come to destroy men's lives, but to save *them*. And they went to another village.

§ 95. REQUIREMENTS OF DISCIPLESHIP.

Samaria.

Matt. 8:19-22. Luke 9:57-62.

And it came to pass, that as they went in the way, a

certain scribe came and said unto him, Lord, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest. And Jesus said unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air *have* nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay *his* head. And he said unto another, Follow me. But he said, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father. Jesus said unto him, Follow me, Let the dead bury their dead: but go thou and preach the kingdom of God. And another also said, Lord, I will follow thee; but let me first go bid them farewell which are at home at my house. And Jesus said unto him, No man having put his hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God.

CHAPTER VI.

FROM THE FEAST OF TABERNACLES TILL
CHRIST'S ARRIVAL AT BETHANY, SIX
DAYS BEFORE HIS FOURTH AND
LAST PASSOVER.

Time, Six Months, Less Six Days

§ 96. JESUS TEACHES IN THE TEMPLE AT THE
FEAST OF TABERNACLES.

Jerusalem.

John 7:11 to 8:1.

Then the Jews sought him at the feast, and said, Where is he? And there was much murmuring among the people concerning him: for some said, He is a good man: others said, Nay; but he deceiveth the people. Howbeit, no man spake openly of him, for fear of the Jews.

Now about the midst of the feast Jesus went up into the temple and taught. And the Jews marvelled, saying, How knoweth this man letters, having never learned? Jesus answered them, and said, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me. If any man will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or *whether* I speak of myself. He that

speaketh of himself seeketh his own glory: but he that seeketh his glory that sent him, the same is true, and no unrighteousness is in him. Did not Moses give you the law, and *yet* none of you keepeth the law? Why go ye about to kill me? The people answered and said, Thou hast a devil: who goeth about to kill thee? Jesus answered and said unto them, I have done one work, and ye all marvel. Moses therefore gave unto you circumcision; (not because it is of Moses, but of the fathers;) and ye on the sabbath-day circumcise a man. If a man on the sabbath-day receive circumcision, that the law of Moses should not be broken, are ye angry at me, because I have made a man every whit whole on the sabbath-day? Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment. Then said some of them of Jerusalem, Is not this he whom they seek to kill? But lo, he speaketh boldly, and they say nothing unto him. Do the rulers know indeed that this is the very Christ? Howbeit, we know this man, whence he is: but when Christ cometh, no man knoweth whence he is. Then cried Jesus in the temple, as he taught, saying, Ye both know me, and ye know whence I am: and I am not come of myself, but he that sent me is true, whom ye know not. But I know him; for I am from him, and he hath sent me. Then they sought to take him: but no man laid hands on him, because his hour was not yet come. And many of the people believed on him, and said, When Christ cometh, will he do more miracles than these which this *man* hath done?

The Pharisees heard that the people murmured such

things concerning him: and the Pharisees and the chief priests sent officers to take him. Then said Jesus unto them, Yet a little while am I with you, and *then* I go unto him that sent me. Ye shall seek me, and shall not find *me*: and where I am, *thither* ye cannot come. Then said the Jews among themselves, Whither will he go, that we shall not find him? will he go unto the dispersed among the Gentiles, and teach the Gentiles? What *manner of* saying is this that he said, Ye shall seek me, and shall not find *me*: and where I am, *thither* ye cannot come? In the last day, that great *day* of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink. He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. (But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believe on him should receive, for the Holy Ghost was not yet *given*, because that Jesus was not yet glorified.)

Many of the people therefore, when they heard this saying, said, Of a truth this is the Prophet. Others said, This is the Christ. But some said, Shall Christ come out of Galilee? Hath not the scripture said, That Christ cometh of the seed of David, and out of the town of Bethlehem, where David was? So there was a division among the people because of him. And some of them would have taken him; but no man laid hands on him.

Then came the officers to the chief priests and Pharisees; and they said unto them, Why have ye not brought him? The officers answered, Never man spake like this man. Then answered them the Pharisees, Are ye also deceived? Have any of the rulers,

or of the Pharisees believed on him? But this people who knoweth not the law are cursed. Nicodemus saith unto them, (he that came to Jesus by night, being one of them,) doth our law judge *any* man before it hear him, and know what he doeth? They answered and said unto him, Art thou also of Galilee? Search, and look: for out of Galilee ariseth no prophet. And every man went unto his own house. Jesus went unto the mount of Olives.

§ 97. THE WOMAN TAKEN IN ADULTERY.

Jerusalem.

John 8: 2-11.

And early in the morning he came again into the temple, and all the people came unto him; and he sat down and taught them. And the scribes and Pharisees brought unto him a woman taken in adultery: and when they had set her in the midst, they say unto him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act. Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be stoned: but what sayest thou? This they said, tempting him, that they might have to accuse him. But Jesus stooped down, and with *his* finger wrote on the ground, *as though he heard them not*. So when they continued asking him, he lifted up himself, and said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her. And again he stooped down, and wrote on the ground. And they which heard *it*, being convicted by *their own* conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, *even* unto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst. When Jesus

had lifted up himself, and saw none but the woman, he said unto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee? She said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her, Neither do I condemn thee: go, and sin no more.

§ 98. JESUS CONTINUES TEACHING IN THE TEMPLE
—REPROVES THE JEWS—THEY ATTEMPT
TO STONE HIM.

Jerusalem.

John 8:12-59.

Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life. The Pharisees therefore said unto him, Thou bearest record of thyself; thy record is not true. Jesus answered and said unto them, Though I bear record of myself, *yet* my record is true: for I know whence I came, and whither I go: but ye cannot tell whence I come, and whither I go. Ye judge after the flesh, I judge no man. And yet if I judge, my judgment is true: for I am not alone, but I and the Father that sent me. It is also written in your law, that the testimony of two men is true. I am one that bear witness of myself; and the Father that sent me, beareth witness of me. Then said they unto him, Where is thy Father? Jesus answered, Ye neither know me, nor my Father: if ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also. These words spake Jesus in the treasury, as he taught in the temple: and no man laid hands on him, for his hour was not yet come.

Then said Jesus again unto them, I go my way, and

ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sins: whither I go, ye cannot come. Then said the Jews, Will he kill himself? because he saith, Whither I go, ye cannot come. And he said unto them, Ye are from beneath; I am from above: ye are of this world; I am not of this world. I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for if ye believe not that I am *he*, ye shall die in your sins. Then said they unto him, Who art thou? . And Jesus saith unto them, Even *the same* that I said unto you from the beginning. I have many things to say, and to judge of you: but he that sent me is true; and I speak to the world those things which I have heard of him. They understood not that he spake to them of the Father. Then said Jesus unto them, When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am *he*, and *that* I do nothing of myself; but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things. And he that sent me is with me: the Father hath not left me alone; for I do always those things that please him. As he spake these words, many believed on him.

Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, *then* are ye my disciples indeed; and ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.

They answered him, We be Abraham's seed, and were never in bondage to any man: how sayest thou, Ye shall be made free? Jesus answered them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever committeth sin, is the servant of sin. And the servant abideth not in the house for ever, *but* the Son abideth ever. If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.

I know that ye are Abraham's seed; but ye seek to kill me, because my word hath no place in you. I speak that which I have seen with my Father: and ye do that which ye have seen with your father. They answered and said unto him, Abraham is our father. Jesus saith unto them, If ye were Abraham's children, ye would do the works of Abraham. But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth, which I have heard of God: this did not Abraham. Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to him, We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, *even* God. Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me: for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent me. Why do ye not understand my speech? *even* because ye cannot hear my word. Ye are of *your* father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do: he was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth; because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. And because I tell *you* the truth, ye believe me not. Which of you convinceth me of sin? And if I say the truth, why do ye not believe me? He that is of God, heareth God's words: ye therefore hear *them* not, because ye are not of God.

Then answered the Jews, and said unto him, Say we not well that thou art a Samaritan, and hast a devil? Jesus answered, I have not a devil; but I honour my Father, and ye do dishonour me. And I seek not mine own glory: there is one that seeketh and judgeth. Verily, verily, I say unto you, If a man keep my saying, he shall never see death. Then said the Jews

unto him, Now we know that thou hast a devil. Abraham is dead, and the prophets; and thou sayest, If a man keep my saying, he shall never taste of death. Art thou greater than our father Abraham, which is dead? and the prophets are dead: whom makest thou thyself? Jesus answered, If I honour myself, my honour is nothing: it is my Father that honoureth me, of whom ye say, that he is your God. Yet ye have not known him; but I know him: and if I should say, I know him not, I shall be a liar like unto you: but I know him, and keep his saying. Your father Abraham rejoiced to see my day: and he saw *it*, and was glad. Then said the Jews unto him, Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham? Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am.

Then took they up stones to cast at him: but Jesus hid himself, and went out of the temple, going through the midst of them, and so passed by.

§ 99. THE SEVENTY SENT FORTH.

Jerusalem.

Luke 10: 1-16.

After these things, the Lord appointed other seventy also, and sent them two and two before his face into every city, and place, whither he himself would come. Therefore said he unto them, The harvest truly *is* great, but the labourers *are* few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he would send forth labourers into his harvest. Go your ways: behold, I send you forth as lambs among wolves. Carry neither purse, nor scrip, nor shoes: and salute no man by the way.

And into whatsoever house ye enter, first say, Peace *be* to this house. And if the son of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon it: if not, it shall turn to you again. And in the same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give: for the labourer is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house. And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before you. And heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, The kingdom of God is come nigh unto you. But into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you not, go your ways out into the streets of the same, and say, Even the very dust of your city which cleaveth on us, we do wipe off against you: notwithstanding, be ye sure of this, that the kingdom of God is come nigh unto you. But I say unto you, That it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom than for that city. Wo unto thee, Chorazin! wo unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon, which have been done in you, they had a great while ago repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes. But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the judgment, than for you. And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted to heaven, shalt be thrust down to hell. He that heareth you, heareth me; and he that despiseth you, despiseth me; and he that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent me.

§ 100. THE SEVENTY RETURN.

Judea.

Luke 10: 17-24.

And the seventy returned again with joy, saying,

Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through thy name. And he said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven. Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you. Notwithstanding, in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rather rejoice, because your names are written in heaven.

In that hour Jesus rejoiced in spirit, and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes: even so, Father; for so it seemed good in thy sight. All things are delivered to me of my Father: and no man knoweth who the Son is, but the Father; and who the Father is, but the Son, and *he* to whom the Son will reveal *him*.

And he turned him unto *his* disciples, and said privately, Blessed *are* the eyes which see the things that ye see. For I tell you, that many prophets and kings have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen *them*; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard *them*.

§ 101. PARABLE OF THE GOOD SAMARITAN

Judea.

Luke 10: 25-37.

And behold, a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? He said unto him, What is written in the law? how readest thou? And he answering said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with

all thy mind; and thy neighbour as thyself. And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt live. But he, willing to justify himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbour? And Jesus answering, said, A certain *man* went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among thieves, which stripped him of his raiment, and wounded *him*, and departed, leaving *him* half dead. And by chance there came down a certain priest that way; and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side. And likewise a Levite, when he was at the place, came and looked *on him*, and passed by on the other side. But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, he had compassion *on him*, and went to *him*, and bound up his wounds, pouring in oil and wine, and set him on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him. And on the morrow, when he departed, he took out two pence, and gave *them* to the host, and said unto him, Take care of him: and whatsoever thou spendest more, when I come again, I will repay thee. Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour unto him that fell among the thieves? And he said, He that shewed mercy on him. Then said Jesus unto him, Go, and do thou likewise.

§ 102. JESUS AT THE HOUSE OF MARTHA AND MARY.

Bethany.

Luke 10: 38-42.

Now it came to pass, as they went, that he entered into a certain village: and a certain woman, named Martha, received him into her house. And she had a

sister called Mary, which also sat at Jesus' feet, and heard his word. But Martha was cumbered about much serving, and came to him, and said, Lord, dost thou not care that my sister hath left me to serve alone? bid her therefore that she help me. And Jesus answered, and said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou art careful, and troubled about many things: but one thing is needful; and Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

§ 103. JESUS TEACHES THE DISCIPLES HOW TO PRAY.

Judea.

Luke 11 : 1-13.

And it came to pass, that as he was praying in a certain place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his disciples. And he said unto them, When ye pray, say,

Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done, as in heaven, so in earth. Give us day by day our daily bread. And forgive us our sins; for we also forgive every one that is indebted to us. And lead us not into temptation; but deliver us from evil.

PARABLE OF THE FRIEND AT MIDNIGHT.

And he said unto them, Which of you shall have a friend, and shall go unto him at midnight, and say unto him, Friend, lend me three loaves: for a friend of mine in his journey is come to me, and I have nothing to set before him? And he from within shall answer and say, Trouble me not: the door is now shut, and

my children are with me in bed; I cannot rise and give thee. I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him, because he is his friend, yet because of his importunity he will rise and give him as many as he needeth.

ASK, SEEK, KNOCK.

And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. For every one that asketh, receiveth; and he that seeketh, findeth; and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened. If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? or if *he ask* a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent? Or if he shall ask an egg, will he offer him a scorpion? If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall *your* heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?

§ 104. JESUS HEALS A DEMONIAK.

Judea.

Luke 11: 14-36.

And he was casting out a devil, and it was dumb. And it came to pass when the devil was gone out, the dumb spake; and the people wondered. But some of them said, He casteth out devils through Beelzebub, the chief of the devils. And others tempting *him*, sought of him a sign from heaven. But he, knowing their thoughts, said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself, is brought to desolation; and a house *divided* against a house, falleth. If Satan also be divided against himself, how shall his kingdom stand?

because ye say that I cast out devils through Beelzebub. And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your sons cast *them* out? therefore shall they be your judges. But if I with the finger of God cast out devils, no doubt the kingdom of God is come upon you. When a strong man armed keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace: but when a stronger than he shall come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him all his armour wherein he trusted, and divideth his spoils. He that is not with me is against me: and he that gathereth not with me scattereth. When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest: and finding none, he saith, I will return unto my house whence I came out. And when he cometh, he findeth *it* swept and garnished. Then goeth he, and taketh *to him* seven other spirits more wicked than himself; and they enter in, and dwell there: and the last *state* of that man is worse than the first.

And it came to pass, as he spake these things, a certain woman of the company lifted up her voice, and said unto him, Blessed *is* the womb that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast sucked. But he said, Yea, rather blessed *are* they that hear the word of God, and keep it.

And when the people were gathered thick together, he began to say, This is an evil generation: they seek a sign; and there shall no sign be given it, but the sign of Jonas the prophet. For as Jonas was a sign unto the Ninevites, so shall also the Son of man be to this generation. The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with the men of this generation, and

condemn them: for she came from the utmost parts of the earth, to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold, a greater than Solomon *is* here. The men of Nineveh shall rise up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: for they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and behold, a greater than Jonas *is* here. No man when he hath lighted a candle, putteth *it* in a secret place, neither under a bushel, but on a candlestick, that they which come in may see the light. The light of the body is the eye: therefore when thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full of light; but when *thine eye* is evil, thy body also *is* full of darkness. Take heed therefore, that the light which is in thee be not darkness. If thy whole body therefore *be* full of light, having no part dark, the whole shall be full of light; as when the bright shining of a candle doth give thee light.

§ 105. JESUS DINES WITH A PHARISEE—PRONOUNCES
WOES AGAINST SCRIBES AND PHARISEES.

Judea.

Luke 11: 37-54.

And as he spake, a certain Pharisee besought him to dine with him: and he went in and sat down to meat. And when the Pharisee saw *it*, he marvelled that he had not first washed before dinner. And the Lord said unto him, Now do ye Pharisees make clean the outside of the cup and the platter; but your inward part is full of ravening and wickedness. *Ye* fools, did not he that made that which is without, make that which is within also? But rather give alms of such things as ye have; and behold, all things are clean

unto you. But wo unto you, Pharisees! for ye tithe mint, and rue, and all manner of herbs, and pass over judgment and the love of God: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone. Wo unto you, Pharisees! for ye love the uppermost seats in the synagogues, and greetings in the markets. Wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are as graves which appear not, and the men that walk over *them* are not aware of *them*.

Then answered one of the lawyers, and said unto him, Master, thus saying, thou reproachest us also. And he said, Wo unto you also, *ye* lawyers! for ye lade men with burdens grievous to be borne, and ye yourselves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers. Wo unto you! for ye build the sepulchres of the prophets, and your fathers killed them. Truly ye bear witness, that ye allow the deeds of your fathers: for they indeed killed them, and ye build their sepulchres. Therefore also said the wisdom of God, I will send them prophets and apostles, and *some* of them they shall slay and persecute: that the blood of all the prophets, which was shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation; from the blood of Abel unto the blood of Zacharias, which perished between the altar and the temple: verily I say unto you, It shall be required of this generation. Wo unto you, lawyers! for ye have taken away the key of knowledge: ye entered not in yourselves, and them that were entering in ye hindered. And as he said these things unto them, the scribes and the Pharisees began to urge *him* vehemently, and to provoke him to speak of many things; laying wait for him, and seek-

ing to catch something out of his mouth, that they might accuse him.

§ 106. JESUS DISCOURSES UPON HYPOCRISY AND
WORLDLINESS.

Judea.

Luke 12: 1-59.

In the mean time, when there were gathered together an innumerable multitude of people, inso-much that they trode one upon another, he began to say unto his disciples first of all, Beware ye of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy. For there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; neither hid, that shall not be known. Therefore, whatsoever ye have spoken in darkness, shall be heard in the light; and that which ye have spoken in the ear in closets, shall be proclaimed upon the house-tops. And I say unto you, my friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that, have no more that they can do. But I will forewarn you whom ye shall fear: Fear him, which after he hath killed, hath power to cast into hell; yea, I say unto you, Fear him. Are not five sparrows sold for two farthings, and not one of them is forgotten before God? But even the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear not therefore: ye are of more value than many sparrows. Also I say unto you, Whosoever shall confess me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess before the angels of God. But he that denieth me before men, shall be denied before the angels of God. And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but unto him that blasphemeth

against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven. And when they bring you unto the synagogues, and *unto* magistrates, and powers, take ye no thought how or what thing ye shall answer, or what ye shall say: for the Holy Ghost shall teach you in the same hour what ye ought to say.

And one of the company said unto him, Master, speak to my brother, that he divide the inheritance with me. And he said unto him, Man, who made me a judge, or a divider over you? And he said unto them, Take heed, and beware of covetousness: for a man's life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth. And he spake a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully: and he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits? And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I bestow all my fruits and my goods. And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, *and* be merry. But God said unto him, *Thou* fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be which thou hast provided? So *is* he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God.

And he said unto his disciples, Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat; neither for the body, what ye shall put on. The life is more than meat, and the body *is more* than raiment. Consider the ravens: for they neither sow nor reap: which neither have store-house, nor barn; and God

feedeth them. How much more are ye better than the fowls? And which of you with taking thought can add to his stature one cubit? If ye then be not able to do that thing which is least, why take ye thought for the rest? Consider the lilies how they grow: they toil not, they spin not; and yet I say unto you, that Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. If then God so clothe the grass, which is to-day in the field, and to-morrow is cast into the oven; how much more *will he clothe* you, O ye of little faith? And seek not ye what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink, neither be ye of doubtful mind. For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: and your Father knoweth that ye have need of these things. But rather seek ye the kingdom of God, and all these things shall be added unto you.

Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom. Sell that ye have, and give alms: provide yourselves bags which wax not old, a treasure in the heavens that faileth not, where no thief approacheth, neither moth corrupteth. For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. Let your loins be girded about, and *your* lights burning; and ye yourselves like unto men that wait for their lord, when he will return from the wedding; that, when he cometh and knocketh, they may open unto him immediately. Blessed *are* those servants, whom the lord when he cometh shall find watching: verily I say unto you, that he shall gird himself, and make them to sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them. And if he shall come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, and find *them* so,

blessed are those servants. And this know, that if the good man of the house had known what hour the thief would come, he would have watched, and not have suffered his house to be broken through. Be ye therefore ready also: for the Son of man cometh at an hour when ye think not.

Then Peter said unto him, Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us, or even to all? And the Lord said, Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom *his* lord shall make ruler over his household, to give *them* *their* portion of meat in due season? Blessed *is* that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. Of a truth I say unto you, that he will make him ruler over all that he hath. But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat the men-servants, and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken; the lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not for *him*, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers. And that servant which knew his lord's will, and prepared not *himself*, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many *stripes*. But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few *stripes*. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required; and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.

I am come to send fire on the earth, and what will I, if it be already kindled? But I have a baptism to be baptized with; and how am I straitened till it be accomplished! Suppose ye that I am come to give

peace on earth? I tell you, Nay; but rather division: for from henceforth there shall be five in one house divided, three against two, and two against three. The father shall be divided against the son, and the son against the father; the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother; the mother-in-law against her daughter-in-law, and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law.

And he said also to the people, When ye see a cloud rise out of the west, straightway ye say, There cometh a shower; and so it is. And when *ye see* the south wind blow, ye say, There will be heat; and it cometh to pass. *Ye* hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky, and of the earth; but how is it, that ye do not discern this time? Yea, and why even of yourselves judge ye not what is right? When thou goest with thine adversary to the magistrate, *as thou art* in the way, give diligence that thou mayest be delivered from him; lest he hale thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and the officer cast thee into prison. I tell thee, thou shalt not depart thence, till thou hast paid the very last mite.

§ 107. SLAUGHTER OF CERTAIN GALILEANS—PAR-
ABLE OF THE BARREN FIG-TREE.

Judea.

Luke 13: 1-9.

There were present at that season some that told him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices. And Jesus answering, said unto them, Suppose ye that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans, because they suffered such

things? I tell you, Nay; but except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish. Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and slew them, think ye that they were sinners above all men that dwelt in Jerusalem? I tell you, Nay; but except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

He spake also this parable: A certain *man* had a fig-tree planted in his vineyard; and he came and sought fruit thereon, and found none. Then said he unto the dresser of his vineyard, Behold, these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig-tree, and find none: cut it down; why cumbereth it the ground? And he answering, said unto him, Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung *it*: and if it bear fruit, *well*: and if not, *then* after that thou shalt cut it down.

§ 108. A MAN BORN BLIND HEALED ON THE SABBATH—CHRIST'S SUBSEQUENT DISCOURSE.

Jerusalem.

John 9:1 to 10:21.

And as *Jesus* passed by, he saw a man which was blind from *his* birth. And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind? *Jesus* answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him. I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh, when no man can work. As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world. When he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and he anointed the eyes of the

blind man with the clay, and said unto him, Go, wash in the pool of Siloam, (which is by interpretation, Sent.) He went his way therefore, and washed, and came seeing.

The neighbours therefore, and they which before had seen him that he was blind, said, Is not this he that sat and begged? Some said, This is he: others said, He is like him *but* he said, I am *he*. Therefore said they unto him, How were thine eyes opened? He answered and said, A man that is called Jesus made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said unto me, Go to the pool of Siloam, and wash: and I went and washed, and I received sight. Then said they unto him, Where is he? He said, I know not.

They brought to the Pharisees him that aforetime was blind. And it was the sabbath-day when Jesus made the clay, and opened his eyes. Then again the Pharisees also asked him how he had received his sight. He said unto them, He put clay upon mine eyes, and I washed, and do see. Therefore said some of the Pharisees, This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the sabbath-day. Others said, How can a man that is a sinner do such miracles? And there was a division among them. They say unto the blind man again, What sayest thou of him, that he hath opened thine eyes? He said, He is a prophet. But the Jews did not believe concerning him, that he had been blind, and received his sight, until they called the parents of him that had received his sight. And they asked them, saying, Is this your son, who ye say was born blind? How then doth he now see? His parents answered them and said, We know that this is

our son, and that he was born blind: but by what means he now seeth, we know not; or who hath opened his eyes, we know not: he is of age; ask him: he shall speak for himself. These *words* spake his parents, because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confess that he was Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue. Therefore said his parents, He is of age; ask him.

Then again called they the man that was blind, and said unto him, Give God the praise: we know that this man is a sinner. He answered and said, Whether he be a sinner *or no*, I know not: one thing I know, that, whereas I was blind, now I see. Then said they to him again, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes? He answered them, I have told you already, and ye did not hear: wherefore would ye hear *it* again? will ye also be his disciples? Then they reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple; but we are Moses' disciples. We know that God spake unto Moses; *as for* this *fellow*, we know not from whence he is. The man answered and said unto them, Why, herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and *yet* he hath opened mine eyes. Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him he heareth. Since the world began was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blind. If this man were not of God, he could do nothing. They answered and said unto him, Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And they cast him out.

Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when

he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God? He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him? And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee. And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him. And Jesus said, For judgment I am come into this world; that they which see not might see, and that they which see might be made blind. And *some* of the Pharisees which were with him heard these words, and said unto him, Are we blind also? Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth.

Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that entereth not by the door into the sheepfold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber. But he that entereth in by the door is the shepherd of the sheep. To him the porter openeth; and the sheep hear his voice: and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out. And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice. And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers. This parable spake Jesus unto them: but they understood not what things they were which he spake unto them.

Then said Jesus unto them again, Verily, verily, I say unto you, I am the door of the sheep. All that ever came before me are thieves and robbers: but the sheep did not hear them. I am the door: by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture. The thief cometh not, but

for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have *it* more abundantly. I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep. But he that is an hireling, and not the shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth; and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep. The hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheep. I am the good shepherd, and know my *sheep*, and am known of mine. As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep. And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, *and* one shepherd. Therefore doth my Father love me, because I lay down my life, that I might take it again. No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This commandment have I received of my Father.

There was a division therefore again among the Jews for these sayings. And many of them said, He hath a devil, and is mad; why hear ye him? Others said, These are not the words of him that hath a devil. Can a devil open the eyes of the blind?

§ 109. JESUS IN JERUSALEM AT THE FESTIVAL OF
THE DEDICATION—HE RETIRES TO BETH-
ABARA, BEYOND JORDAN.

John 10: 22-42.

And it was at Jerusalem, the feast of the dedication, and it was winter. And Jesus walked in the temple

in Solomon's porch. Then came the Jews round about him, and said unto him, How long dost thou make us to doubt? If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly. Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me. But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you. My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: and I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any pluck them out of my hand. My Father, which gave *them* me, is greater than all; and none is able to pluck *them* out of my Father's hand. I and *my* Father are one.

Then the Jews took up stones again to stone him. Jesus answered them, Many good works have I shewed you from my Father; for which of those works do ye stone me? The Jews answered him, saying, For a good work we stone thee not; but for blasphemy, and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God. Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods? If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the scripture cannot be broken; say ye of him whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest; because I said, I am the Son of God? If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not. But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works: that ye may know and believe that the Father *is* in me, and I in him.

Therefore they sought again to take him; but he escaped out of their hand, and went away again beyond Jordan, into the place where John at first

baptized; and there he abode. And many resorted unto him, and said, John did no miracle; but all things that John spake of this man were true. And many believed on him there.

§ 110. JESUS HEALS AN INFIRM WOMAN ON THE
SABBATH.

Perea.

Luke 13: 10-21.

And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath. And behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up *herself*. And when Jesus saw her, he called *her to him*, and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity. And he laid *his* hands on her: and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God. And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the sabbath-day, and said unto the people, There are six days in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the sabbath-day. The Lord then answered him, and said, *Thou* hypocrite, doth not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or *his* ass from the stall, and lead *him* away to watering? And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo, these eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the sabbath-day? And when he had said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed: and all the people rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

Then said he, Unto what is the kingdom of God

like? and whereunto shall I resemble it? It is like a grain of mustard-seed, which a man took, and cast into his garden, and it grew, and waxed a great tree; and the fowls of the air lodged in the branches of it. And again he said, Whereunto shall I liken the kingdom of God? It is like leaven, which a woman took and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

§ III. JESUS JOURNEYS TOWARDS JERUSALEM TEACHING—HE IS WARNED AGAINST HEROD.

Perea.

Luke 13: 22-35.

And he went through the cities and villages, teaching, and journeying toward Jerusalem.

Then said one unto him, Lord, are there few that be saved? And he said unto them, Strive to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able. When once the Master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us; and he shall answer and say unto you, I know you not whence ye are: then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets. But he shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence ye are; depart from me, all *ye* workers of iniquity. There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and you *yourselves* thrust out. And they shall come from the east, and *from* the west, and from the north, and *from* the south, and shall sit down in the kingdom

of God. And behold, there are last, which shall be first; and there are first, which shall be last.

The same day there came certain of the Pharisees, saying unto him, Get thee out, and depart hence; for Herod will kill thee. And he said unto them, Go ye and tell that fox, Behold, I cast out devils, and I do cures to-day and to-morrow, and the third *day* I shall be perfected. Nevertheless I must walk to-day and to-morrow, and the *day* following: for it cannot be that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem. O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto thee; how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen *doth* gather her brood under *her* wings, and ye would not! Behold, your house is left unto you desolate. And verily I say unto you, Ye shall not see me, until *the* time come when ye shall say, Blessed *is* he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

§ 112. JESUS HEARS OF LAZARUS' SICKNESS.

Perca.

John 11:1-6.

Now a certain *man* was sick, *named* Lazarus, of Bethany, the town of Mary and her sister Martha. (It was *that* Mary which anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick.) Therefore his sisters sent unto him, saying, Lord, behold, he whom thou lovest is sick. When Jesus heard *that*, he said, This sickness is not unto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God might be glorified thereby. Now Jesus

loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus. When he had heard therefore that he was sick, he abode two days still in the same place where he was.

§ 113. JESUS DINES WITH A CHIEF PHARISEE ON THE SABBATH—HEALS A MAN WITH DROPSY—PARABLE OF THE GREAT SUPPER.

Perea.

Luke 14: 1-24.

And it came to pass, as he went into the house of one of the chief Pharisees to eat bread on the sabbath-day, that they watched him. And behold, there was a certain man before him which had the dropsy. And Jesus answering, spake unto the lawyers and Pharisees, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath-day? And they held their peace. And he took *him*, and healed him, and let him go: and answered them, saying, Which of you shall have an ass or an ox fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the sabbath-day? And they could not answer him again to these things.

And he put forth a parable to those which were bidden, when he marked how they chose out the chief rooms; saying unto them, when thou art bidden of any *man* to a wedding, sit not down in the highest room, lest a more honorable man than thou be bidden of him; and he that bade thee and him come and say to thee, Give this man place; and thou begin with shame to take the lowest room. But when thou art bidden, go and sit down in the lowest room; that when he that bade thee cometh, he may say unto thee, Friend,

go up higher: then shalt thou have worship in the presence of them that sit at meat with thee. For whosoever exalteth himself shall be abased, and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

Then said he also to him that bade him, When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor *thy* rich neighbours; lest they also bid thee again, and a recompense be made thee. But when thou makest a feast, call the poor, the maimed, the lame, the blind; and thou shalt be blessed: for they cannot recompense thee: for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the just.

And when one of them that sat at meat with him heard these things, he said unto him, Blessed *is* he that shall eat bread in the kingdom of God. Then said he unto him, A certain man made a great supper, and bade many: and sent his servant at supper-time, to say to them that were bidden, Come, for all things are now ready. And they all with one *consent* began to make excuse. The first said unto him, I have bought a piece of ground, and I must needs go and see it: I pray thee have me excused. And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them: I pray thee have me excused. And another said, I have married a wife: and therefore I cannot come. So that servant came, and shewed his lord these things. Then the master of the house being angry, said to his servant, Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blind. And the servant said, Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is room. And the lord said

unto the servant, Go out into the highways and hedges, and compel *them* to come in, that my house may be filled. For I say unto you, that none of those men which were bidden, shall taste of my supper.

§ 114. WHAT IS REQUIRED OF CHRIST'S DISCIPLES.

Perea.

Luke 14: 25-35.

And there went great multitudes with him: and he turned, and said unto them, If any *man* come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple. For which of you intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he have *sufficient* to finish *it*? Lest haply after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finish *it*, all that behold *it* begin to mock him, saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finish. Or what king going to make war against another king, sitteth not down first, and consulteth whether he be able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand? Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and desireth conditions of peace. So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple.

Salt *is* good: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be seasoned? It is neither fit for the land, nor yet for the dunghill; *but* men cast it out. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

§ 115. PARABLES AND TEACHINGS.

Perea.

Luke 15:1 to 17:10.

Then drew near unto him all the publicans and sinners for to hear him. And the Pharisees and scribes murmured, saying, This man receiveth sinners, and eateth with them.

THE LOST SHEEP.

Luke 15:3-7.

And he spake this parable unto them, saying, What man of you having an hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, until he find it? And when he hath found *it*, he layeth *it* on his shoulders, rejoicing. And when he cometh home, he calleth together *his* friends and neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoice with me; for I have found my sheep which was lost. I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons which need no repentance.

THE LOST PIECE OF SILVER.

Luke 15:8-10.

Either what woman having ten pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and sweep the house, and seek diligently till she find *it*? And when she hath found *it*, she calleth *her* friends and *her* neighbours together, saying, Rejoice with me; for I have found the piece which I had lost. Likewise, I say unto you, There is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth.

THE PRODIGAL SON.

Luke 15: 11-32.

And he said, A certain man had two sons: and the younger of them said to *his* father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth *to me*. And he divided unto them *his* living. And not many days after, the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country, and there wasted his substance with riotous living. And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land; and he began to be in want. And he went and joined himself to a citizen of that country; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine. And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat; and no man gave unto him. And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger! I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee, and am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants. And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him. And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son. But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put *it* on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on *his* feet: and bring hither the fatted calf, and kill *it*; and let us eat, and be merry: for this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And

they began to be merry. Now his elder son was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard music and dancing. And he called one of the servants and asked what these things meant. And he said unto him, Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound. And he was angry, and would not go in; therefore came his father out, and entreated him. And he answering, said to *his* father, Lo, these many years do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandment; and yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends: but as soon as this thy son was come, which hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calf. And he said unto him, Son, thou art ever with me; and all that I have is thine. It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.

THE UNJUST STEWARD.

Luke 16: 1-13.

And he said also unto his disciples, There was a certain rich man which had a steward; and the same was accused unto him that he had wasted his goods. And he called him, and said unto him, How is it that I hear this of thee? give an account of thy stewardship: for thou mayest be no longer steward. Then the steward said within himself, What shall I do? for my lord taketh away from me the stewardship: I cannot dig; to beg I am ashamed. I am resolved what to do, that when I am put out of the stewardship,

they may receive me into their houses. So he called every one of his lord's debtors *unto him*, and said unto the first, How much owest thou unto my lord? And he said, An hundred measures of oil. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and sit down quickly, and write fifty. Then said he to another, And how much owest thou? And he said, An hundred measures of wheat. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and write four-score. And the lord commended the unjust steward, because he had done wisely: for the children of this world are in their generation wiser than the children of light. And I say unto you, Make to yourselves friends of the mammon of unrighteousness; that when ye fail, they may receive you into everlasting habitations. He that is faithful in that which is least, is faithful also in much; and he that is unjust in the least, is unjust also in much. If therefore ye have not been faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to your trust the true *riches*? And if ye have not been faithful in that which is another man's, who shall give you that which is your own?

No servant can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

JESUS REPROVES THE PHARISEES.

Luke 16: 14-18.

And the Pharisees also, who were covetous, heard all these things, and they derided him. And he said unto them, Ye are they which justify yourselves before

men; but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed among men, is abomination in the sight of God. The law and the prophets *were* until John: since that time the kingdom of God is preached, and every man presseth into it. And it is easier for heaven and earth to pass, than one tittle of the law to fail. Whosoever putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery; and whosoever marrieth her that is put away from *her* husband, committeth adultery.

THE RICH MAN AND LAZARUS.

Luke 16: 19-31.

There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen and fared sumptuously every day: and there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores, and desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table: moreover, the dogs came and licked his sores. And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom. The rich man also died, and was buried: and in hell he lifted up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. And he cried, and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue: for I am tormented in this flame. But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented. And besides all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they

which would pass from hence to you, cannot; neither can they pass to us, that *would come* from thence. Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house: for I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment. Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets; let them hear them. And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent. And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead.

JESUS INCULCATES FORBEARANCE, FAITH, HUMILITY.

Luke 17: 1-10.

Then said he unto the disciples, It is impossible but that offences will come: but wo *unto him* through whom they come! It were better for him that a mill-stone were hanged about his neck, and he cast into the sea, than that he should offend one of these little ones.

Take heed to yourselves: If thy brother trespass against thee, rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him. And if he trespasses against thee seven times in a day, and seven times in a day turn again to thee, saying, I repent; thou shalt forgive him. And the apostles said unto the Lord, Increase our faith. And the Lord said, If ye had faith as a grain of mustard-seed, ye might say unto this sycamine-tree, Be thou plucked up by the root, and be thou planted in the sea; and it should obey you. But which of you having a servant ploughing, or feeding cattle, will say unto him by and by, when he is come from the field,

Go and sit down to meat? And will not rather say unto him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thyself, and serve me, till I have eaten and drunken; and afterward thou shalt eat and drink? Doth he thank that servant, because he did the things that were commanded him? I trow not. So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do.

§ 116. JESUS GOES INTO JUDEA AND RAISES LAZARUS
FROM THE DEAD.

Bethany.

John 11:7-46.

Then after that saith he to *his* disciples, Let us go into Judea again. *His* disciples say unto him, Master, the Jews of late sought to stone thee; and goest thou thither again? Jesus answered, Are there not twelve hours in the day? If any man walk in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world. But if a man walk in the night, he stumbleth, because there is no light in him.

These things said he: and after that he saith unto them, Our friend Lazarus sleepeth; but I go that I may awake him out of sleep. Then said his disciples, Lord, if he sleep, he shall do well. Howbeit Jesus spake of his death: but they thought that he had spoken of taking of rest in sleep. Then said Jesus unto them plainly, Lazarus is dead. And I am glad for your sakes that I was not there, to the intent ye may believe; nevertheless, let us go unto him. Then

said Thomas, which is called Didymus, unto his fellow-disciples, Let us also go, that we may die with him.

Then when Jesus came, he found that he had *lain* in the grave four days already. (Now Bethany was nigh unto Jerusalem, about fifteen furlongs off.) And many of the Jews came to Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother. Then Martha, as soon as she heard that Jesus was coming, went and met him: but Mary sat *still* in the house. Then said Martha unto Jesus, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died. But I know that even now, whatsoever thou wilt ask of God, God will give *it* thee. Jesus saith unto her, Thy brother shall rise again. Martha saith unto him, I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day. Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: and whosoever liveth, and believeth in me, shall never die. Believest thou this? She saith unto him, Yea, Lord: I believe that thou art the Christ, the Son of God, which should come into the world. And when she had so said, she went her way, and called Mary her sister secretly, saying, The Master is come, and calleth for thee. As soon as she heard *that*, she arose quickly, and came unto him.

Now Jesus was not yet come into the town, but was in that place where Martha met him. The Jews then which were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary that she rose up hastily, and went out, followed her, saying, She goeth unto the grave to weep there. Then when Mary was come where Jesus was, and saw him, she fell down at his

feet, saying unto him, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died. When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Jews also weeping which came with her, he groaned in the spirit, and was troubled, and said, Where have ye laid him? They say unto him, Lord, come and see. Jesus wept. Then said the Jews, Behold how he loved him! And some of them said, Could not this man, which opened the eyes of the blind, have caused that even this man should not have died?

Jesus therefore again groaning in himself, cometh to the grave. It was a cave, and a stone lay upon it. Jesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath been *dead* four days. Jesus saith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that if thou wouldest believe, thou shouldest see the glory of God? Then they took away the stone *from the place* where the dead was laid. And Jesus lifted up *his* eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me: and I knew that thou hearest me always: but because of the people which stand by, I said *it*, that they may believe that thou hast sent me. And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth. And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with grave-clothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go. Then many of the Jews which came to Mary, and had seen the things which Jesus did, believed on him. But some of them went their ways to the Pharisees, and told them what things Jesus had done.

§ 117. COUNCIL OF THE CHIEF PRIESTS AND PHARISEES TO PUT JESUS TO DEATH—HE DEPARTS FROM JERUSALEM TO EPHRAIM.

John 11: 47-54.

Then gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a council, and said, What do we? for this man doeth many miracles. If we let him thus alone, all *men* will believe on him: and the Romans shall come, and take away both our place and nation. And one of them, *named* Caiaphas, being the high priest that same year, said unto them, Ye know nothing at all, nor consider that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not. And this spake he not of himself: but being high priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus should die for that nation; and not for that nation only, but that also he should gather together in one the children of God that were scattered abroad. Then from that day forth they took counsel together for to put him to death.

Jesus therefore walked no more openly among the Jews; but went thence unto a country near to the wilderness, into a city called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples.

§ 118. TEN LEPERS CLEANSED.

Probably in some Village of Samaria During Jesus' last Journey Toward Jerusalem.

Luke 17: 11-19.

And it came to pass, as he went to Jerusalem, that he passed through the midst of Samaria and Galilee. And as he entered into a certain village, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood afar off: and

they lifted up *their* voices, and said, Jesus, Master, have mercy on us. And when he saw *them*, he said unto them, Go shew yourselves unto the priests. And it came to pass, that as they went, they were cleansed. And one of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a loud voice glorified God, and fell down on *his* face at his feet, giving him thanks: and he was a Samaritan. And Jesus answering, said, Were there not ten cleansed? but where *are* the nine? There are not found that returned to give glory to God, save this stranger. And he said unto him, Arise, go thy way: thy faith hath made thee whole.

§ 119. THE COMING OF CHRIST'S KINGDOM—SUDDEN
AND UNEXPECTED.

Probably Galilee.

Luke 17: 20-37.

And when he was demanded of the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come, he answered them and said, The kingdom of God cometh not with observation: neither shall they say, Lo here! or, Lo there! for behold, the kingdom of God is within you. And he said unto the disciples, The days will come, when ye shall desire to see one of the days of the Son of man, and ye shall not see *it*. And they shall say to you, See here! or, See there! go not after *them*, nor follow *them*. For as the lightning that lighteneth out of the one *part* under heaven, shineth unto the other *part* under heaven; so shall also the Son of man be in his day. But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation. And as it was in the days of Noe, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of

man. They did eat, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark, and the flood came, and destroyed them all. Likewise also as it was in the days of Lot: they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded; but the same day that Lot went out of Sodom, it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed *them* all. Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed. In that day, he which shall be upon the house-top, and his stuff in the house, let him not come down to take it away: and he that is in the field, let him likewise not return back. Remember Lot's wife. Whosoever shall seek to save his life, shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose his life, shall preserve it. I tell you, in that night there shall be two *men* in one bed; the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left. Two *women* shall be grinding together; the one shall be taken, and the other left. Two *men* shall be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left. And they answered and said unto him, Where, Lord? And he said unto them, Wheresoever the body *is*, thither will the eagles be gathered together.

§ 120. PARABLE OF THE IMPORTUNATE WIDOW—
OF THE PHARISEE AND PUBLICAN.

Galilee.

Luke 18: 1-14.

And he spake a parable unto them *to this end*, that men ought always *to* pray, and not to faint; saying, There was in a city a judge, which feared not God, neither regarded man. And there was a widow in

that city; and she came unto him, saying, Avenge me of mine adversary. And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man, yet, because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest by her continual coming she weary me. And the Lord said, Hear what the unjust judge saith. And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them? I tell you that he will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless when the Son of man cometh, shall he find faith on the earth?

And he spake this parable unto certain which trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised others: two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican. The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men *are*, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican. I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess. And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as *his* eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner. I tell you, this man went down to his house justified *rather* than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

§ 121. JESUS' FINAL DEPARTURE FROM GALILEE—
CONCERNING DIVORCE.

Perea.

Matt. 19: 1-12. Mark 10: 1-12.

And it came to pass, *that* when Jesus had finished these sayings, he arose from thence, and departed from

Galilee, and came into the coasts of Judea, beyond Jordan: and great multitudes followed him, and the people resorted to him again; and, as he was wont, he taught them again, and healed them there.

The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and saying unto him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause? And he answered and said unto them, What did Moses command you? And they said, Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement, and to put *her* away. And Jesus answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, that he which made *them* at the beginning, made them male and female, and said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain shall be one flesh? Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder. They say unto him, Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorcement, and to put her away? He saith unto them, Moses, because of the hardness of your hearts, suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so. Whosoever shall put away his wife, except *it be* for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away, doth commit adultery. And in the house his disciples asked him again of the same *matter*. And he saith unto them, Whosoever shall put away his wife and marry another, committeth adultery against her. And if a woman shall put away her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adultery.

His disciples say unto him, If the case of the man

be so with *his* wife, it is not good to marry. But he said unto them, All *men* cannot receive this saying, save *they* to whom it is given. For there are some eunuchs, which were so born from *their* mother's womb: and there are some eunuchs, which were made eunuchs of men: and there be eunuchs, which have made themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake. He that is able to receive *it*, let him receive *it*.

§ 122. JESUS BLESSES LITTLE CHILDREN.

Perea.

Matt. 19: 13-15. Mark 10: 13-16. Luke 18: 15-17.

And they brought young children to him, that he should put *his* hands on them, and pray: but when his disciples saw it they rebuked those that brought *them*. But when Jesus saw *it*, he was much displeased, and called the children and said unto the disciples, Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God, (Heaven—Matt.) Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein. And he took them up in his arms, put *his* hands upon them, and blessed them, and departed thence.

§ 123. THE RICH YOUNG RULER—DISCOURSE UPON RICHES.

Perea.

Matt. 19: 16-30. Mark 10: 17-31. Luke 18: 18-30.

And when he was gone forth into the way, there came a certain ruler running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Master, what good thing shall I do that I may inherit eternal life?

And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? *there is* none good, but one, *that is* God. But if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments. He saith unto him, Which? Jesus said, Thou shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness, Defraud not, Honour thy father and *thy* mother: and, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. The young man saith unto him, Master, all these things have I kept from my youth up: what lack I yet? Then Jesus beholding him loved him, and said unto him, Yet one thing thou lackest: If thou wilt be perfect, go thy way, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven; and come, take up the cross, and follow me. But when the young man heard this he was very sorrowful, and went away grieved, for he had great possessions. And when Jesus saw that he was very sorrowful, he looked round about and saith unto his disciples, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God! And the disciples were astonished at his words. But Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches to enter into the kingdom of God! And again I say unto you, It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God. When his disciples heard *it*, they were exceedingly amazed, and they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselves, Who then can be saved? But Jesus beheld *them*, and said unto them, With men this is impossible, but with God all things are possible.

Then answered Peter, and said unto him, Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee; what shall we have therefore? And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That ye which have followed me in the regeneration, when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel. And every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for (the kingdom of God's sake—Luke) my name's sake, and the gospel's, shall receive an hundred-fold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the world to come, eternal life. But many *that are* first shall be last; and the last first.

§ 124. THE PARABLE OF THE LABOURERS IN THE VINEYARD

Perea.

Matt. 20: 1-16.

For the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man *that* is an householder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers into his vineyard. And when he had agreed with the labourers for a penny a day, he sent them into his vineyard. And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing idle in the market-place, and said unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard; and whatsoever is right, I will give you. And they went their way. Again he went out about the sixth and ninth hour, and did likewise. And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing idle, and saith unto them, Why stand ye here all

the day idle? They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard; and whatsoever is right, *that* shall ye receive. So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, Call the labourers, and give them *their* hire, beginning from the last unto the first. And when they came that *were hired* about the eleventh hour, they received every man a penny. But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more; and they likewise received every man a penny. And when they had received *it*, they murmured against the good man of the house, saying, These last have wrought *but* one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us, which have borne the burden and heat of the day. But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for a penny? Take *that* thine *is*, and go thy way: I will give unto this last, even as unto thee. Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with mine own? is thine eye evil because I am good? So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many be called, but few chosen.

§ 125. JESUS THE THIRD TIME FORETELLS HIS DEATH
AND RESURRECTION.

Perea.

Matt. 20: 17-19. Mark 10: 32-34. Luke 18: 31-34.

And they were in the way, going up to Jerusalem; and Jesus went before them: and they were amazed; and as they followed, they were afraid. And he again took the twelve disciples apart in the way, and began to tell them what things should happen unto him,

saying, Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and all things that are written by the prophets concerning the Son of man shall be accomplished. For he shall be betrayed unto the chief priests, and unto the scribes, and they shall condemn him to death, and shall deliver him to the Gentiles. And they shall mock him, and spitefully entreat him, and shall scourge him, and shall spit upon him, and shall kill (crucify—Matt.) him: and the third day he shall rise again. And they understood none of these things: and this saying was hid from them, neither knew they the things which were spoken.

§ 126. AMBITIOUS REQUEST OF JAMES AND JOHN.

Perea.

Matt. 20: 20-28. Mark 10: 35-45.

Then came to him the mother of Zebedee's children with her sons, James and John, worshipping *him*, and saying, Master, we would that thou shouldest do for us whatsoever we shall desire. And he said unto them, What would ye that I should do for you? They said unto him, Grant unto us that we may sit, one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left hand, in thy glory. But Jesus answered and said, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of, and to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with? They say unto him, We are able. And he saith unto them, Ye shall drink indeed of my cup, and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with: but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give, but *it shall be given to them* for whom it is prepared of my Father. And when the ten heard *it*, they were moved with indigna-

tion against James and John. But Jesus called them *to him*, and saith unto them, Ye know that they which are accounted to rule over the Gentiles, exercise lordship over them; and their great ones exercise authority upon them. But it shall not be so among you: but whosoever will be great among you, shall be your minister: and whosoever of you will be the chiefest, shall be servant of all. For even the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

§ 127. JESUS HEALS TWO BLIND MEN NEAR JERICHO.

Matt. 20: 29-34. Mark 10: 46-52. Luke 18: 35-43.

And they came to Jericho: and as he went out of Jericho with his disciples, a great multitude followed him.

And behold, two blind men sat by the highway side begging, [one of them was] (blind Bartimeus, the son of Timeus,) and hearing the multitude pass by he asked what it meant. And when they told him that it was Jesus of Nazareth passing by, he began to cry out, and say, Jesus, *thou* son of David, have mercy on me. And they which went before rebuked him, that he should hold his peace: but he cried so much the more, *Thou* son of David, have mercy on me. And Jesus stood still, and commanded them to be called: and they call the blind men, saying unto them, Be of good comfort, rise; he calleth you. And they, casting away their garments, rose, and came to Jesus. And Jesus answered and said unto them, What will you that I should do unto you? The blind men said unto him, Lord, that we might receive our sight. So Jesus had

compassion *on them*, and touched their eyes: and said unto them, Go your way; receive your sight: your faith hath saved you. And immediately they received their sight, and followed him, glorifying God: and all the people, when they saw *it*, gave praise unto God.

§ 128. JESUS VISITS ZACCHEUS—PARABLE OF THE
TEN POUNDS.

Perea.

Luke 19: 1-28.

And *Jesus* entered and passed through Jericho. And behold, *there was* a man named Zaccheus, which was the chief among the publicans, and he was rich. And he sought to see Jesus who he was; and could not for the press, because he was little of stature. And he ran before, and climbed up into a sycamore-tree to see him; for he was to pass that *way*. And when Jesus came to the place, he looked up, and saw him, and said unto him, Zaccheus, make haste, and come down: for to-day I must abide at thy house. And he made haste, and came down, and received him joyfully. And when they saw *it*, they all murmured, saying, That he was gone to be guest with a man that is a sinner. And Zaccheus stood, and said unto the Lord; Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poor; and if I have taken any thing from any man by false accusation, I restore *him* four-fold. And Jesus said unto him, This day is salvation come to this house, forsomuch as he also is a son of Abraham. For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost.

And as they heard these things, he added and spake

a parable, because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and because they thought that the kingdom of God should immediately appear.

He said therefore, A certain nobleman went into a far country to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return. And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, and said unto them, Occupy till I come. But his citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying, We will not have this *man* to reign over us. And it came to pass, that when he was returned, having received the kingdom, then he commanded these servants to be called unto him, to whom he had given the money, that he might know how much every man had gained by trading. Then came the first, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounds. And he said unto him, Well, thou good servant, because thou hast been faithful in a very little, have thou authority over ten cities. And the second came, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained five pounds. And he said likewise to him, Be thou also over five cities. And another came, saying, Lord, behold *here is* thy pound, which I have kept laid up in a napkin: for I feared thee, because thou art an austere man: thou takest up that thou layedst not down, and reapest that thou didst not sow. And he saith unto him, Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee, *thou* wicked servant. Thou knewest that I was an austere man, taking up that I laid not down, and reaping that I did not sow: wherefore then gavest not thou my money into the bank, that at my coming I might have required mine own with usury? And he said unto them that stood by, Take from him the pound, and give *it* to

him that hath ten pounds. (And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds.) For I say unto you, That unto every one which hath, shall be given; and from him that hath not, even that he hath shall be taken away from him. But those mine enemies, which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay *them* before me. And when he had thus spoken, he went before ascending up to Jerusalem.

§ 129. MANY SEEK JESUS AT JERUSALEM.

John 11:55-57.

And the Jews' passover was nigh at hand: and many went out of the country up to Jerusalem before the passover, to purify themselves. Then sought they for Jesus, and spake among themselves, as they stood in the temple, What think ye, that he will not come to the feast? Now both the chief priests and the Pharisees had given a commandment, that, if any man knew where he were, he should shew *it*, that they might take him.

§ 130. JESUS AT BETHANY.

John 12:1, 9-11.

Then Jesus, six days before the passover, came to Bethany, where Lazarus was which had been dead, whom he raised from the dead. Much people of the Jews therefore knew that he was there: and they came, not for Jesus' sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead. But the chief priests consulted that they might put Lazarus also to death; because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus.

CHAPTER VII.

THE FIRST FIVE DAYS OF THE FOURTH
AND LAST PASSOVER WEEK DURING
CHRIST'S PUBLIC MINISTRY—FROM
JESUS' PUBLIC ENTRY INTO
JERUSALEM TILL THE
PASSOVER MEAL.

Time, Five Days.

§ 131. JESUS ENTERS JERUSALEM PUBLICLY.

First Day of the Week.

Matt. 21: 1-11. Mark 11: 1-11. Luke 19: 29-44. John 12: 12-19.

And it came to pass, on the next day, when they came nigh to Jerusalem, unto Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount of Olives, Jesus sent forth two of his disciples, saying unto them, Go ye into the village over against you, and as soon as ye be entered into it, ye shall find an ass tied, and with her a colt tied, whereon never man sat; loose *them* and bring *them* unto me. And if any *man* say aught unto you, ye shall say, The Lord hath need of them; and straightway he will send them hither.

And the disciples went, and did as Jesus commanded them, and found even as he had said unto them, the

colt tied by the door without, in a place where two ways met; and as they were loosing the colt, the owners thereof said unto them, Why loose ye the colt? And they said unto them even as Jesus had commanded: The Lord hath need of him, and they let them go.

And they brought the ass and the colt to Jesus: and they cast their garments upon the colt, and they set Jesus thereon. All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying,

Tell ye the daughter of Sion,
Behold, thy King cometh unto thee,
Meek, and sitting upon an ass,
And a colt the foal of an ass.

And a very great multitude that were come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem, took branches of palm-trees, and went forth to meet him, and many spread their garments in the way: and others cut down branches off the trees, and strewed *them* in the way. And when he was come nigh, even now at the descent of the mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoice and praise God with a loud voice, for all the mighty works that they had seen; and the multitudes that went before, and that followed, cried, saying,

Hosanna to the Son of David:

Blessed *is* he that cometh in the name of the Lord:

Blessed *be* the kingdom of our father David, that cometh in the name of the Lord:

Blessed *is* the King of Israel that cometh in the name of the Lord.

Peace in heaven, and glory in the highest.

Hosanna in the highest.

These things understood not his disciples at the first: but when Jesus was glorified, then remembered they that these things were written of him, and *that* they had done these things unto him. The people therefore that was with him when he called Lazarus out of his grave, and raised him from the dead, bare record. For this cause the people also met him, for that they heard that he had done this miracle. The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, Perceive ye how ye prevail nothing? behold, the world is gone after him. And some of the Pharisees from among the multitude said unto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples. And he answered and said unto them, I tell you, that if these should hold their peace, the stones would immediately cry out.

And when he was come near, he beheld the city, and wept over it, saying, If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things *which belong* unto thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes. For the days shall come upon thee, that thine enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and compass thee round, and keep thee in on every side, and shall lay thee even with the ground, and thy children within thee: and they shall not leave in thee one stone upon another: because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation. And Jesus entered into Jerusalem, and into the temple: and when he had looked round about upon all things, all the city was moved, saying, Who is this? And the multitude said, This is Jesus the prophet of Nazareth of Galilee.

§ 132. CERTAIN GREEKS DESIRE TO SEE JESUS—HE
RETIRES TO BETHANY TO LODGE.

First day of the Week.

Matt. 21: 17. Mark 11: 11. John 12: 20-36.

And there were certain Greeks among them, that came up to worship at the feast: the same came therefore to Philip, which was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and desired him, saying, Sir, we would see Jesus. Philip cometh and telleth Andrew: and again Andrew and Philip tell Jesus.

And Jesus answered them, saying, The hour is come, that the Son of man should be glorified. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit. He that loveth his life shall lose it; and he that hateth his life in this world shall keep it unto life eternal. If any man serve me, let him follow me; and where I am, there shall also my servant be: if any man serve me, him will *my* Father honour. Now is my soul troubled; and what shall I say? Father, save me from this hour: but for this cause came I unto this hour. Father, glorify thy name. Then came there a voice from heaven, *saying*, I have both glorified *it*, and will glorify *it* again. The people therefore that stood by, and heard *it*, said that it thundered. Others said, An angel spake to him. Jesus answered and said, This voice came not because of me, but for your sakes. Now is the judgment of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out. And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all *men* unto me. (This he said, signifying what death he should die.) The people answered him, We

have heard out of the law that Christ abideth for ever: and how sayest thou, The Son of man must be lifted up? Who is this Son of man? Then Jesus said unto them, Yet a little while is the light with you. Walk while ye have the light, lest darkness come upon you: for he that walketh in darkness knoweth not whither he goeth. While ye have light, believe in the light, that ye may be the children of light. These things spake Jesus, and now the even-tide was come, he departed, and did hide himself from them, and went out of the city into Bethany with the twelve, and he lodged there.

§ 133. JESUS CURSES A BARREN FIG-TREE.

Between Bethany and Jerusalem—Second Day of the Week.

Matt. 21: 18-19. Mark 11: 12-14.

And on the morrow, when they were come from Bethany, in the morning, as he returned into the city, he was hungry. And seeing a fig-tree afar off, having leaves, he came, if haply he might find any thing thereon: and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves only: for the time of figs was not *yet*. And Jesus said unto it, No man eat fruit of thee hereafter for ever. And his disciples heard *it*. And presently the fig-tree withered away.

§ 134. JESUS EXPELS THE TRADERS FROM THE TEMPLE—RETIRES IN THE EVENING TO THE MOUNT OF OLIVES—PROBABLY BETHANY.

Second Day of the Week.

Matt. 21: 12-16. Mark 11: 15-19. Luke 19: 45-48 and 21: 37-38.

And they come to Jerusalem: and went into the

temple of God, and Jesus began to cast out them that sold and bought therein, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that sold doves; and would not suffer that any man should carry *any* vessel through the temple. And he taught, saying unto them, Is it not written,

My house shall be called, of all nations, the house of prayer?

But ye have made it a den of thieves.

And the blind and the lame came to him in the temple; and he healed them. And when the chief priests and scribes saw the wonderful things that he did, and the children crying in the temple, and saying, Hosanna to the Son of David; they were sore displeased, and said unto him, Hearest thou what these say? And Jesus saith unto them, Yea: have ye never read,

Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings
Thou hast perfected praise?

And the scribes and chief priests heard *it*, and he taught daily in the temple. But the chief priests, and the scribes, and the chief of the people sought how they might destroy him, and could not find what they might do: for they feared him, because all the people were very attentive to hear him, and were astonished at his doctrine. And in the day-time he was teaching in the temple; and at night he went out of the city and abode in the mount that is called *the mount* of Olives. And all the people came early in the morning to him in the temple, for to hear him.

§ 135. THE WITHERED FIG-TREE.

Between Bethany and Jerusalem—Third Day of the Week.

Matt. 21 : 20-22. Mark 11 : 20-26.

And in the moning, as they passed by, they saw the fig-tree dried up from the roots, and the disciples marvelled, saying, How soon is the fig-tree withered away! And Peter calling to remembrance, saith unto him, Master, behold, the fig-tree which thou cursedst is withered away. And Jesus answering, saith unto them, Have faith in God. For verily I say unto you, If ye have faith, and doubt not, ye shall not only do this *which is done* to the fig-tree, but also, verily I say unto you, That whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he saith. Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire when ye pray, believe that ye receive *them*, and ye shall have *them*. And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have aught against any: that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses. But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.

§ 136. CHRIST'S AUTHORITY QUESTIONED.

Jerusalem—Third Day of the Week.

Matt. 21 : 23-27. Mark 11 : 27-33. Luke 20 : 1-8.

And they come again to Jerusalem. And it came to pass, as he was walking in the temple, and as he taught the people in the temple, and preached the

gospel, the chief priests and the scribes came upon *him*, with the elders, and spake unto him, saying, Tell us, by what authority doest thou these things? or who is he that gave thee this authority? And Jesus answered and said unto them, I also will ask you one thing, which if ye tell me, I in like wise will tell you by what authority I do these things. The baptism of John, whence was it? from heaven, or of men? answer me. And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say unto us, Why did ye not then believe him? But if we shall say, Of men; we fear all the people will stone us: for they be persuaded and hold that John was a prophet indeed. And they answered and said unto Jesus, We cannot tell. And Jesus answering saith unto them, Neither do I tell you by what authority I do these things.

§ 137. PARABLE OF THE TWO SONS.

Jerusalem—Third Day of the Week.

Matt. 21: 28-32.

But what think ye? A *certain* man had two sons; and he came to the first, and said, Son, go work to-day in my vineyard. He answered and said, I will not; but afterward he repented, and went. And he came to the second, and said likewise. And he answered and said, I *go*, sir: and went not. Whether of them twain did the will of *his* father? They say unto him, The first. Jesus saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, That the publicans and the harlots go into the kingdom of God before you. For John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him

not: but the publicans and the harlots believed him: and ye, when ye had seen *it*, repented not afterward, that ye might believe him.

§ 138. PARABLE OF THE VINEYARD AND THE WICKED HUSBANDMEN.

Jerusalem—Probably the Third Day of the Week.

Matt. 21: 33-46. Mark 12: 1-12. Luke 20: 9-19.

Then began he to speak to the people this parable:

Hear another parable; There was a certain householder, which planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a wine-press in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far country: and when the time of the fruit drew near, he sent his servants to the husbandmen, that they might receive the fruits of the vineyard. And the husbandmen took his servants, and beat one, and killed another and stoned another, and sent them away empty. Again he sent other servants more than the first: and they did unto them likewise, beating some and killing some. Then said the lord of the vineyard, What shall I do? I will send my only and well beloved son: it may be they will reverence *him* when they see him. He sent him also at last unto them. But when the husbandmen saw him, they reasoned among themselves, saying, This is the heir: come, let us kill him, and let us seize on his inheritance that it may be ours. And they caught him, and cast *him* out of the vineyard, and slew *him*. When the lord therefore of the vineyard cometh, what will he do unto those husbandmen? They say unto him, He will miserably destroy those wicked men, and will let out *his* vineyard unto

other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons. And when they heard *it*, they said, God forbid. And he beheld them, and said, What is this then that is written, Did ye never read in the scriptures,

The stone which the builders rejected,
The same is become the head of the corner:
This is the Lord's doing,
And it is marvellous in our eyes?

Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof. And whosoever shall fall on this stone, shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder. And when the chief priest and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceived that he spake against them. But when they sought the same hour to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude, because they took him for a prophet, and they left him, and went their way.

§ 139. PARABLE OF THE MARRIAGE OF THE KING'S
SON.

Jerusalem.

Matt. 22: 1-14.

And Jesus answered and spake unto them again by parables, and said, The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his son, and sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come. Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and *my* fatlings *are* killed, and all things *are* ready:

come unto the marriage. But they made light of *it*, and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise. And the remnant took his servants, and entreated *them* spitefully, and slew *them*. But when the king heard *thereof*, he was wroth: and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned up their city. Then saith he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy. Go ye therefore into the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage. So those servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests.

And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment: and he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither, not having a wedding-garment? And he was speechless. Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast *him* into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. For many are called, but few are chosen.

§ 140. CONCERNING TRIBUTE TO CÆSAR.

Jerusalem.

Matt. 22: 15-22. Mark 12: 13-17. Luke 20: 20-26.

Then went the Pharisees, and took counsel how they might entangle him in *his* talk. And they watched *him*. And they sent out unto him their disciples, with the Herodians, as spies, which should feign themselves just men, that they might take hold of his words, that so they might deliver him unto the power

and authority of the governor. And when they were come, they say unto him, Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man: for thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest rightly the way of God in truth: tell us therefore, What thinkest thou? Is it lawful for us to give tribute unto Cæsar, or no? Shall we give, or shall we not give? But Jesus perceived their wickedness, (*hypocrisy—Mark; craftiness—Luke,*) and said, Why tempt ye me, *ye* hypocrites? Shew me the tribute-money, bring me a penny, that I may see *it*. And they brought unto him a penny. And he saith unto them, Whose *is* this image, and superscription? They say unto him, Cæsar's. Then saith he unto them, Render therefore unto Cæsar, the things which are Cæsar's; and unto God, the things that are God's. When they had heard they could not take hold of his words before the people: and they marvelled at his answer, and held their peace, and left him, and went their way.

§ 141. OF MARRIAGE IN THE RESURRECTION.

Jerusalem.

Matt. 22: 23-33. Mark 12: 18-27. Luke 20: 27-40.

The same day came to him certain of the Sadducees (which deny that there is any resurrection) and they asked him, saying, Master, Moses wrote unto us, If a man die, having a wife, and without children, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother. Now there were with us seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and died without children, and left his wife unto his brother. And the second took her to wife, and he died childless. And the third

took her; and in like manner the seven also: and they left no children, and died. Last of all the woman died also. In the resurrection therefore, when they shall rise, whose wife shall she be of them? for the seven had her to wife. And Jesus answering, said unto them, Ye do err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God. For when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marry, nor are given in marriage; but are as the angels which are in heaven. The children of this world marry, and are given in marriage: but they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage: neither can they die any more: for they are equal unto the angels; and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection. But as touching the resurrection of the dead, that the dead are raised, even Moses shewed. Have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, in the book of Moses, how in the bush God spake unto him, saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living: for all live unto him. Ye therefore do greatly err. And when the multitude heard *this*, they were astonished at his doctrine.

Then certain of the scribes answering, said, Master, thou hast well said. And after that, they durst not ask him any *question at all*.

§ 142. THE GREAT COMMANDMENT.

Jerusalem.

Matt. 22: 34-40. Mark 12: 28-34.

But when the Pharisees had heard that he had put

the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together. Then one of the scribes, a lawyer, came, and having heard them reasoning together, and perceiving that he had answered them well, asked him, tempting him, and saying, Master, which *is* the first commandment of all, the great commandment in the law?

And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments *is*, Hear, O Israel; The Lord our God is one Lord: and thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this is the first and great commandment. And the second *is* like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. There is none other commandment greater than these. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.

And the scribe said unto him, Well, Master, thou hast said the truth: for there is one God; and there is none other but he. And to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love *his* neighbour as himself, is more than all whole burnt-offerings and sacrifices. And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said unto him, Thou art not far from the kingdom of God. And no man after that durst ask him *any question*.

§ 143. HOW IS CHRIST THE SON OF DAVID?

Jerusalem.

Matt. 22: 41-46. Mark 12: 35-37. Luke 20: 41-44.

While the Pharisees were gathered together, and while he taught in the temple, Jesus asked them, say-

ing, What think ye of Christ? whose son is he? They say unto him, *The son* of David. He saith unto them, How say the scribes that Christ is the son of David, for David himself, in the book of Psalms, by the Holy Ghost, calls him Lord, saying,

The LORD said unto my Lord,
Sit thou on my right hand,
Till I make thine enemies thy footstool?

David therefore himself calleth him Lord, and how is he then his son? And no man was able to answer him a word, neither durst any *man*, from that day forth, ask him any more *questions*. And the common people heard him gladly.

§ 144. WARNINGS AGAINST THE SCRIBES AND PHARISEES.

Jerusalem.

Matt. 23: 1-12. Mark 12: 38-39. Luke 20: 45-46.

Then in the audience of the people, spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his disciples, saying, in his doctrine, The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses' seat: all therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, *that* observe and do: but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not. For they bind heavy burdens, and grievous to be borne, and lay *them* on men's shoulders; but they *themselves* will not move them with one of their fingers. But all their works they do for, to be seen of men: beware of the scribes which love to make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments, and desire to walk in long robes, and love the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the chief seats in the synagogues, and greetings in the

markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi. But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master, *even* Christ; and all ye are brethren. And call no *man* your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven. Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, *even* Christ. But he that is greatest among you, shall be your servant. And whosoever shall exalt himself, shall be abased: and he that shall humble himself, shall be exalted.

§ 145. WOES AGAINST THE SCRIBES AND PHARISEES.

Jerusalem.

Matt. 23: 13-36. Mark 12: 40. Luke 20: 47.

But wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in *yourselves*, neither suffer ye them that are entering, to go in. Wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows' houses, and for a show and a pretence make long prayer: therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation. Wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte; and when he is made, ye make him two-fold more the child of hell than yourselves. Wo unto you, *ye* blind guides! which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a debtor. *Ye* fools, and blind! for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that sanctifieth the gold? And whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing; but whosoever sweareth by the gift that is upon it, he is guilty. *Ye* fools, and blind! for whether *is* greater, the gift, or the altar that

sanctifieth the gift? Whoso therefore shall swear by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon. And whoso shall swear by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein. And he that shall swear by heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon. Wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye pay tithe of mint, and anise, and cummin, and have omitted the weightier *matters* of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone. *Ye* blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel. Wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excess. *Thou* blind Pharisee, cleanse first that *which is* within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also. Wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead *men's* bones, and of all uncleanness. Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity. Wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous, and say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets. Wherefore ye be witnesses unto yourselves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets. Fill ye up then the measures of your fathers. *Ye* serpents, *ye* generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell?

Wherefore, behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and scribes; and *some* of them ye shall kill and crucify, and *some* of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues, and persecute *them* from city to city: that upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel, unto the blood of Zacharias, son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar. Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this generation.

§ 146. LAMENTATION OVER JERUSALEM.

Jerusalem.

Matt. 23: 37-39.

O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, *thou* that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under *her* wings, and ye would not! Behold, your house is left unto you desolate. For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed *is* he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

§ 147. THE WIDOW'S MITE.

Jerusalem.

Mark 12: 41-44. Luke 21: 1-4.

And Jesus sat over against the treasury, and beheld how the people cast money into the treasury: and many that were rich cast in much. And there came a certain poor widow, and she threw in two mites, which make a farthing. And he called *unto him* his disciples, and saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, That this poor widow hath cast more in than all they which

have cast into the treasury. For all these have of their abundance cast in unto the offerings of God: but she of her penury hath cast in all that she had, *even* all her living.

§ 148. REFLECTIONS ON THE UNBELIEF OF THE
JEW.

Jerusalem.

John 12: 37-50.

But though he had done so many miracles before them, yet they believed not on him: That the saying of Esaias the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spake, Lord, who hath believed our report? and to whom hath the arm of the Lord been revealed? Therefore they could not believe, because that Esaias said again, He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart; that they should not see with *their* eyes, nor understand with *their* heart, and be converted, and I should heal them. These things said Esaias, when he saw his glory, and spake of him.

Nevertheless, among the chief rulers also many believed on him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess *him*, lest they should be put out of the synagogue: for they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God.

Jesus cried, and said, He that believeth on me, believeth not on me, but on him that sent me: and he that seeth me, seeth him that sent me. I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on me should not abide in darkness. And if any man hear my words, and believe not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world.

He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day. For I have not spoken of myself; but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak. And I know that his commandment is life everlasting: whatsoever I speak therefore, even as the Father said unto me, so I speak.

§ 149. JESUS LEAVING THE TEMPLE FORETELLS ITS
DESTRUCTION.

Jerusalem.

Matt. 24: 1-2. Mark 13: 1-2. Luke 21: 5-6.

And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple. And as he went out, his disciples came to *him* for to shew him the buildings of the temple, and one of them saith unto him, Master, see what manner of stones, and what building *are here!*

And some spake of the temple, how it was adorned with goodly stones, and gifts. And Jesus answering, said unto him, Seest thou these great buildings? *As for* these things which ye behold, the days will come, in the which there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

§ 150. JESUS FORETELLS THE COMING OF FALSE
CHRISTS, THE PERSECUTION OF HIS DISCIPLES,
AND DESCRIBES HIS SECOND COMING.

Mount of Olives.

Matt. 24: 3-31. Mark 13: 3-27. Luke 21: 7-28.

And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, over against the temple, Peter, and James, and John, and

Andrew, asked him privately, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what *shall be* the sign when all these things shall be fulfilled? and what *shall be* the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world? And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you. For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many. And the time draweth near: go ye not therefore after them. And when ye shall hear of wars, and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all *these things* must come to pass, but the end is not yet. For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and great earthquakes shall be in divers places, and troubles, and fearful sights, and great signs shall there be from heaven. All these *are* the beginning of sorrows.

But take heed to yourselves: for before all these they shall lay their hands on you, and persecute *you*, for they shall deliver you up to councils: and into prisons, to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and in the synagogues ye shall be beaten: and ye shall be brought before rulers and kings for my sake, and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake. And it shall turn to you for a testimony against them. Settle *it* therefore in your hearts, when they shall lead *you*, and deliver you up take no thought beforehand what ye shall answer, neither do ye premeditate: but whatsoever shall be given you in that hour, that speak ye: for it is not ye that speak, but the Holy Ghost. For I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to gainsay nor resist. And ye shall be betrayed both by parents, and brethren, and

kinsfolks, and friends; and *some* of you shall they cause to be put to death. And ye shall be hated of all *men* for my name's sake. But there shall not an hair of your head perish. In your patience possess ye your souls. And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many. And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold. But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved. And this gospel of the kingdom shall be first preached in all the world, for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come.

When ye, therefore, shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, where it ought not, (let him that readeth understand,) and when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh, then let them that be in Judea flee to the mountains: and let them which are in the midst of it depart out; and let not them that are in the countries enter thereinto. And let him that is on the house-top not go down into the house, neither enter *therein*, to take anything out of his house: and let him that is in the field not turn back again for to take up his garment. For these be the days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled. And wo unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days! But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the sabbath-day: for there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath upon this people. For *in* those days shall be affliction, and great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the creation which God created unto this time, neither ever

shall be. And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled. And except that the Lord had shortened those days, no flesh should be saved: but for the elect's sake, whom he hath chosen, he hath shortened the days. And then, if any man shall say to you, Lo, here *is* Christ; or lo, *he is* there; believe *him* not. For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if *it were* possible, they shall deceive (seduce—Mark) even the very elect. But take ye heed: behold, I have foretold you all things. Wherefore, if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert; go not forth: behold, *he is* in the secret chambers; believe *it* not. For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. For wheresoever the carcass is, there will the eagles be gathered together.

Immediately after the tribulation of those days, shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken: and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring; men's hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth: and then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. And he shall send his angels with a great

sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other—from the uttermost part of the earth to the uttermost part of heaven. And when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads: for your redemption draweth nigh.

§ 151. JESUS ENFORCES WATCHFUL PREPARATION.

Mount of Olives.

Matt. 24. 32-51. Mark 13: 28-37. Luke 21: 29-36.

And he spake to them a parable; Behold the fig-tree, and all the trees. When his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know of your own selves that summer is now nigh at hand. So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to pass, know ye that the kingdom of God is nigh at hand, even at the door. Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away, till all these things be done. Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away.

But of that day and *that* hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father. But as the days of Noe *were*, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. For as in the days that were before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark, and knew not until the flood came, and took them all away: so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. Then shall two be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left. Two *women shall be* grinding at the mill; the one shall be taken, and the other left.

Watch therefore; for ye know not what hour your

Lord doth come. But know this, that if the good man of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken up. Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as ye think not, the Son of man cometh. Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season? Blessed *is* that servant, whom his lord, when he cometh, shall find so doing. Verily I say unto you, That he shall make him ruler over all his goods. But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to smite *his* fellow-servants, and to eat and drink with the drunken; the lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for *him*, and in an hour that he is not aware of, and shall cut him asunder, and appoint *him* his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting and drunkenness, and cares of this life, and *so* that day come upon you unawares. For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth. Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man. Take ye heed, watch and pray: for ye know not when the time is. *For the Son of man is* as a man taking a far journey, who left his house, and gave authority to his servants, and to every man his work; and commanded the porter to watch. Watch ye therefore: for ye know

not when the master of the house cometh, at even, or at midnight, or at the cock-crowing, or in the morning: lest coming suddenly, he find you sleeping. And what I say unto you, I say unto all, Watch.

§ 152. JESUS TEACHES TO WATCH, WORK AND PRAY
—PARABLE OF THE TEN VIRGINS AND
THE TALENTS.

Mount of Olives.

Matt. 25: 1-30.

Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom. And five of them were wise, and five *were* foolish. They that *were* foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them: but the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps. While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept. And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom cometh; go ye out to meet him. Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps. And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil; for our lamps are gone out. But the wise answered, saying, *Not so*; lest there be not enough for us and you: but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves. And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage: and the door was shut. Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us. But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not. Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the hour wherein the Son of man cometh.

For *the kingdom of heaven is* as a man travelling into a far country, *who* called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods. And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one; to every man according to his several ability; and straightway took his journey. Then he that had received the five talents, went and traded with the same, and made *them* other five talents. And likewise he that *had received* two, he also gained other two. But he that had received one, went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money. After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them. And so he that had received five talents, came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents: behold, I have gained besides them five talents more. His lord said unto him, Well done, *thou* good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. He also that had received two talents came, and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents besides them. His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. Then he which had received the one talent came, and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strewed: and I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, *there* thou hast *that is* thine. His lord answered and said unto him, *Thou* wicked and slothful servant, thou

knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strewed: thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and *then* at my coming I should have received mine own with usury. Take therefore the talent from him, and give *it* unto him which hath ten talents. For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not, shall be taken away even that which he hath. And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

§ 153. SCENE OF THE FINAL JUDGMENT.

Mount of Olives.

Matt. 25: 31-46.

When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory: and before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth *his* sheep from the goats: and he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left.

Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: for I was an hungered, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in: naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me. Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungered, and fed *thee*? or thirsty, and gave *thee* drink? When saw we

thee a stranger, and took *thee* in? or naked, and clothed *thee*? Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee? And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done *it* unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done *it* unto me.

Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels: for I was an hungered, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not. Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungered, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee? Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did *it* not to one of the least of these, ye did *it* not to me.

And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal.

§ 154. JESUS ANNOUNCES HIS BETRAYAL AND CRUCIFIXION.

Mount of Olives.

Matt. 26: 1-2. Mark 14: 1. Luke 22: 1.

And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples, Ye know that after two days is *the feast of* the passover, and of unleavened bread: and the Son of man is betrayed to be crucified.

§ 155. THE JEWISH RULERS CONSPIRE AGAINST CHRIST.

Jerusalem—Fourth Day of the Week, Beginning at Sunset.

Matt. 26: 3-5. Mark 14: 1-2. Luke 22: 2.

Then assembled together the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the palace of the high priest, who was called Caiaphas, and consulted that they might take Jesus by subtilty, and kill *him*. But they said, Not on the feast-day, lest there be an uproar among the people. For they feared the people.

§ 156. JESUS SUPS AT BETHANY—MARY ANOINTS HIM.

Probably the Evening Introducing the Fifth Day of the Week.

Matt. 26: 6-13. Mark 14: 3-9. John 12: 2-8.

Now when Jesus was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, they made him a supper there; and Martha served: but Lazarus was one of them that sat at the table with him. Then as he sat at meat, Mary came having an alabaster-box of a pound of ointment of spikenard, very costly, and very precious; and she brake the box, and poured *it* on his head, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment. But when his disciples saw *it*, they had indignation, saying, To what purpose is this waste. Then saith one of them, Judas Iscariot, Simon's *son*, which should betray him, Why was not this ointment sold for three

hundred pence, and given to the poor? This he said, not that he cared for the poor; but because he was a thief, and had the bag, and bare what was put therein. And they murmured against her. When Jesus understood *it*, he said unto them, Let her alone; why trouble ye the woman? for she hath wrought a good work upon me. For ye have the poor with you always, and whensoever ye will ye may do them good: but me ye have not always. She hath done what she could: against the day of my burying hath she kept this. For in that she hath poured this ointment on my body, she is come aforehand to anoint me for my burial. Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this gospel shall be preached in the whole world, *there* shall also this, that this woman hath done, be told for a memorial of her.

§ 157. JUDAS ENGAGES TO BETRAY JESUS.

Jerusalem—Probably the Evening Introducing the Fifth Day of the Week.

Matt. 26: 14-16. Mark 14: 10-11. Luke 22: 3-6.

Then entered Satan into Judas surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve. And he went his way, and communed with the chief priests and captains, how he might betray him unto them. And said *unto them*, What will ye give me, and I will deliver him unto you? And when they heard *it*, they were glad, and they covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver. And he promised, and from that time he sought opportunity how he might conveniently betray him unto them in the absence of the multitude.

§ 158. PREPARATION FOR THE PASSOVER.

Jerusalem—Fifth Day of the Week.

Matt. 26: 17-19. Mark 14: 12-16. Luke 22: 7-13.

And the first day of unleavened bread, when the passover must be killed, the disciples came to Jesus, saying unto him, Where wilt thou that we go and prepare, that thou mayest eat the passover? And he sent Peter and John, saying, Go and prepare us the passover, that we may eat. And they said unto him, Where wilt thou that we prepare? And he said unto them, Go ye into the city, and there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water: follow him into the house where he entereth in. And ye shall say unto the good man of the house, The Master saith unto thee, My time is at hand; I will keep the passover at thy house with my disciples. Where is the guest-chamber, where I shall eat the passover with my disciples? And he will shew you a large upper room furnished *and* prepared: there make ready for us. And they went forth, and came into the city, and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the passover.

CHAPTER VIII.

THE PASSOVER MEAL AND INSTITUTION OF THE LORD'S SUPPER.

*Time, the Evening Introducing the Sixth Day of
the Week.*

§ 159. BEGINNING OF THE PASSOVER MEAL.

An Upper Chamber in Jerusalem.

Matt. 26: 20. Mark 14: 17. Luke 22: 14-18.

When the hour was come, he sat down, and the twelve apostles with him. And he said unto them, With desire I have desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer. For I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God. And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take this, and divide *it* among yourselves. For I say unto you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God shall come.

§ 160. CONTENTION AMONG THE TWELVE.

An Upper Chamber in Jerusalem.

Luke 22: 24-30.

And there was also a strife among them, which of them should be accounted the greatest. And he said

unto them, The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and they that exercise authority upon them are called benefactors. But ye *shall* not *be* so: but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger; and he that is chief, as he that doth serve. For whether *is* greater, he that sitteth at meat, or he that serveth? *is* not he that sitteth at meat? but I am among you as he that serveth. Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations. And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me; that ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

§ 161. JESUS WASHES THE DISCIPLES' FEET.

An Upper Chamber in Jerusalem.

John 13: 1-20.

Now before the feast of the passover, when Jesus knew that his hour was come that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end. And supper being ended, (the devil having now put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's *son*, to betray him,) Jesus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he was come from God, and went to God; he riseth from supper, and laid aside his garments; and took a towel, and girded himself. After that he poureth water into a basin, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe *them* with the towel wherewith he was girded.

Then cometh he to Simon Peter: and Peter saith

unto him, Lord, dost thou wash my feet? Jesus answered and said unto him, What I do thou knowest not now; but thou shalt know hereafter. Peter saith unto him, Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me. Simon Peter saith unto him, Lord, not my feet only, but also *my* hands and *my* head. Jesus saith to him, He that is washed needeth not save to wash *his* feet, but is clean every whit: and ye are clean, but not all. For he knew who should betray him: therefore said he, Ye are not all clean. So after he had washed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was set down again, he said unto them, Know ye what I have done to you? Ye call me Master, and Lord: and ye say well; for *so* I am. If I then, *your* Lord and Master, have washed your feet; ye also ought to wash one another's feet. For I have given you an example, that ye should do as I have done to you. Verily, verily, I say unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord; neither he that is sent greater than he that sent him. If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them.

I speak not of you all; I know whom I have chosen; but that the scripture may be fulfilled,

He that eateth bread with me,
Hath lifted up his heel against me.

Now I tell you before it come, that, when it is come to pass, ye may believe that I am *he*. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that receiveth whomsoever I send, receiveth me; and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me.

§ 162. JESUS FORETELLS HIS BETRAYAL, AND POINTS OUT THE TRAITOR—JUDAS WITHDRAWS.

An Upper Chamber in Jerusalem.

Matt. 26: 21-25. Mark 14: 18-21. Luke 22: 21-23. John 13: 21-30.

When Jesus had thus said, he was troubled in spirit, and as they sat, and did eat, Jesus said, Verily I say unto you, One of you which eateth with me, whose hand is with me on the table, shall betray me. Then the disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he spake. And they began to inquire among themselves, which of them it was that should do this thing. And they were exceeding sorrowful, and began every one of them to say unto him, one by one, Lord, is it I? Is it I? And he answered and said unto them, *It is* one of the twelve that dippeth *his* hand with me in the dish, the same shall betray me. The Son of man indeed goeth, as it is written of him: but wo unto that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! it had been good for that man if he had never been born.

Now there was leaning on Jesus' bosom, one of his disciples, whom Jesus loved. Simon Peter therefore beckoned to him, that he should ask who it should be of whom he spake. He then, lying on Jesus' breast, saith unto him, Lord, who is it? Jesus answered, He it is to whom I shall give a sop, when I have dipped *it*. And when he had dipped the sop, he gave *it* to Judas Iscariot, *the son* of Simon. Then Judas, which betrayed him, answered and said, Master, is it I? He said unto him, Thou hast said.

And after the sop Satan entered into him. Then said Jesus unto him, That thou doest, do quickly. Now no man at the table knew for what intent he

spake this unto him. For some of *them* thought, because Judas had the bag, that Jesus had said unto him, Buy *those things* that we have need of against the feast; or, that he should give something to the poor. He then, having received the sop, went immediately out: and it was night.

§ 163. JESUS FORETELLS PETER'S DENIAL.

An Upper Chamber in Jerusalem.

Luke 22: 31-38. John 13: 31-38.

Therefore, when he was gone out, Jesus said, Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified, and God is glorified in him. If God be glorified in him, God shall also glorify him in himself, and shall straightway glorify him. Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek me; and, as I said unto the Jews, Whither I go, ye cannot come, so now I say to you. A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. By this shall all *men* know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.

Simon Peter said unto him, Lord, whither goest thou? Jesus answered him, Whither I go, thou canst not follow me now; but thou shalt follow me afterward. Peter said unto him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee now? And the Lord said, Simon, Simon, behold, Satan hath desired to *have* you, that he may sift *you* as wheat: but I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: and when thou art converted, strengthen thy brethren. And he said unto him, Lord, I am ready to go with thee, both into prison, and to death. I will lay down my life for thy sake. Jesus answered

him, Wilt thou lay down thy life for my sake? Verily, verily, I tell thee, Peter, the cock shall not crow this day, before that thou shalt thrice deny that thou knowest me.

And he said unto them, When I sent you without purse, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye any thing? And they said, Nothing. Then said he unto them, But now, he that hath a purse, let him take *it*, and likewise *his* scrip: and he that hath no sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one. For I say unto you, that this that is written must yet be accomplished in me,

And he was reckoned among the transgressors:

For the things concerning me have an end. And they said, Lord, behold, here *are* two swords. And he said unto them, It is enough.

§ 164. JESUS INSTITUTES THE LORD'S SUPPER.

An Upper Chamber in Jerusalem.

Matt. 26: 26-29. Mark 14: 22-25. Luke 22: 19-20. I Cor. 11: 23-26.

And the Lord Jesus, the *same* night in which he was betrayed, as they were eating, took bread, and blessed *it*, and brake *it*, and gave *it* to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body which is given (broken—Paul) for you: this do in remembrance of me. Likewise also after supper, he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave *it* to them, saying, Drink ye all of it; for this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for you and for many for the remission of sins. And they all drank of it. And he said unto them, This do ye, as oft as ye drink *it*, in remembrance of me. For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do

shew the Lord's death till he come. But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom.

§ 165. JESUS COMFORTS HIS DISCIPLES, AND PROMISES THE COMFORTER.

An Upper Chamber in Jerusalem.

John 14: 1-31.

Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me. In my Father's house are many mansions: if *it were* not so, I would have told you I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you unto myself; that where I am, *there* ye may be also. And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know.

Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest; and how can we know the way? Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, and the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. If ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also: and from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him.

Philip saith unto him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us. Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? he that hath seen me, hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou *then*, Shew us the Father? Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I speak unto you, I speak not of myself: but the Father, that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works. Believe me that

I *am* in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works' sake. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater *works* than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father. And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. If ye shall ask any thing in my name, I will do *it*.

If ye love me, keep my commandments: and I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever; *even* the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him; for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you. I will not leave you comfortless: I will come to you. Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more; but ye see me: because I live, ye shall live also. At that day ye shall know that I *am* in my Father, and ye in me, and I in you. He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me, shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself to him. Judas saith unto him, (not Iscariot) Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thyself unto us, and not unto the world? Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him. He that loveth me not, keepeth not my sayings: and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which sent me.

These things have I spoken unto you, being *yet* present with you. But the Comforter, *which is* the

Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you. Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid. Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away, and come *again* unto you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoice, because I said, I go unto the Father: for my Father is greater than I. And now I have told you before it come to pass, that when it is come to pass, ye might believe. Hereafter I will not talk much with you: for the prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me. But that the world may know that I love the Father; and as the Father gave me commandment, even so I do. Arise, let us go hence.

§ 166. CHRIST THE TRUE VINE; HIS DISCIPLES THE BRANCHES.

An Upper Chamber in Jerusalem

John 15:1-27.

I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman. Every branch in me that beareth not fruit, he taketh away: and every *branch* that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit. Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you. Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me. I am the vine, ye *are* the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing. If a man abide not in

me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast *them* into the fire, and they are burned. If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you. Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples. As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: continue ye in my love. If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love. These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and *that* your joy might be full.

This is my commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you. Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends. Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you. Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father, I have made known unto you. Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and *that* your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you. These things I command you, that ye love one another. If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before *it hated* you. If ye were of the world, the world would love his own; but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.

Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have per-

secuted me, they will also persecute you: if they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also. But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, because they know not him that sent me. If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloak for their sin. He that hateth me, hateth my Father also. If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin: but now have they both seen, and hated both me and my Father. But *this cometh to pass*, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated me without a cause. But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, *even* the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me. And ye also shall bear witness, because ye have been with me from the beginning.

§ 167. JESUS WARNS HIS DISCIPLES OF PERSECUTION
—PROMISES THE HOLY SPIRIT—PRAYER
IN CHRIST'S NAME.

An Upper Chamber in Jerusalem.

John 16:1-33.

These things have I spoken unto you, that ye should not be offended. They shall put you out of the synagogues: yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you, will think that he doeth God service. And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor me. But these things have I told you, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you of them. And these things I said not unto you at the beginning because I was

with you. But now I go my way to him that sent me, and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou? But because I have said these things unto you, sorrow hath filled your heart.

Nevertheless, I tell you the truth: It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you. And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment: of sin, because they believe not on me; of righteousness, because I go to my Father, and ye see me no more; of judgment, because the prince of this world is judged.

I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now. Howbeit, when he, the Spirit of truth is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, *that* shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come. He shall glorify me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall shew *it* unto you. All things that the Father hath are mine: therefore said I, that he shall take of mine, and shall shew *it* unto you.

A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me, because I go to the Father. Then said *some* of his disciples among themselves, What is this that he saith unto us, A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me: and, Because I go to the Father? They said therefore, What is this that he saith, A little while? we cannot tell what he saith. Now Jesus knew that they were desirous to ask him, and said unto them, Do ye inquire among yourselves

of that I said, A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me? Verily, verily, I say unto you, that ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice: and ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy. A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world. And ye now therefore have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no man taketh from you.

And in that day ye shall ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give *it* you. Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full. These things have I spoken unto you in proverbs: but the time cometh when I shall no more speak unto you in proverbs, but I shall shew you plainly of the Father. At that day ye shall ask in my name: and I say not unto you, that I will pray the Father for you: for the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God. I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I leave the world, and go to the Father.

His disciples said unto him, Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and speakest no proverb. Now are we sure that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should ask thee: by this we believe that thou camest forth from God.

Jesus answered them, Do ye now believe? Behold, the hour cometh, yea, is now come, that ye shall be

scattered every man to his own, and shall leave me alone: and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me. These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation, but be of good cheer: I have overcome the world.

§ 168. CHRIST'S LAST PRAYER WITH HIS DISCIPLES.

An Upper Chamber in Jerusalem

Matt. 26: 30. Mark 14: 26. Luke 22: 39. John 17: 1-26, 18: 1.

These words spake Jesus, and lifted up his eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee: as thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as thou hast given him. And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom thou hast sent. I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do. And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self, with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.

I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word. Now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are of thee: for I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and they have received *them*, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me. I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me; for they are thine.

And all mine are thine, and thine are mine· and I am glorified in them. And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, as we *are*. While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled. And now come I to thee, and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves. I have given them thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil. They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth. As thou hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world. And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth.

Neither pray I for these alone; but for them also which shall believe on me through their word: that they all may be one; as thou, Father, *art* in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. And the glory which thou gavest me, I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one; I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them as thou hast loved me.

Father, I will that they also whom thou hast given

me be with me where I am; that they may behold my glory which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world. O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee: but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me. And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare *it*: that the love wherewith thou hast loved me, may be in them, and I in them. When Jesus had spoken these words, and they had sung a hymn, they went out.

CHAPTER IX.

CHRIST'S BETRAYAL, ARREST, TRIAL AND CRUCIFIXION.

*Time, from the Evening Introducing the Sixth
Day, until the Morning of the First.*

§ 169. JESUS AND THE APOSTLES GO TO THE MOUNT
OF OLIVES—ON THE WAY, HE AGAIN FORETELLS
PETER'S DENIAL AND THE DISPERSION
OF THE APOSTLES.

Evening Introducing the Sixth Day.

Matt. 26: 30-35. Mark 14: 26-31. Luke 22. 39. John 18. 1.

And Jesus went as he was wont, over the brook Cedron, to the mount of Olives; and his disciples also followed him. Then saith Jesus unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written,

I will smite the shepherd,
And the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad.

But after I am risen again, I will go before you into Galilee. Peter answered and said unto him, Though all *men* shall be offended because of thee, *yet* will I never be offended. And Jesus saith unto him, Verily

I say unto thee, That this day, *even* in this night, before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice. Peter said unto him, the more vehemently, Though I should die with thee, yet will I not deny thee in any wise. Likewise also said all the disciples.

§ 170. CHRIST'S AGONY IN GETHSEMANE.

Mount of Olives—Evening Introducing the Sixth Day.

Matt. 26. 36-46. Mark 14: 32-42. Luke 22. 40-46. John 18: 1.

And they came to a place which was named Gethsemane, where was a garden, into the which Jesus entered, and his disciples. And he saith to his disciples, Sit ye here and pray that ye enter not into temptation while I go and pray yonder. And he took with him Peter, and the two sons of Zebedee, James and John, and began to be sore amazed, and sorrowful, and very heavy; then saith he unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death: tarry ye here, and watch with me. And he went a little further, from them about a stone's cast, and kneeled down, and fell on his face, on the ground, and prayed that, if it were possible, the hour might pass from him. And he said, Abba, Father, all things *are* possible unto thee; O my Father, if thou be willing, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me: nevertheless, not my will, but thine, be done. And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him. And being in an agony, he prayed more earnestly: and his sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground.

And when he rose up from prayer, and was come to

his disciples, he found them sleeping for sorrow, and said unto Peter, Simon, sleepest thou? Couldst not thou watch one hour? And unto them [all,] What! Could ye not watch with me one hour? Why sleep ye? Rise, watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed *is* willing, but the flesh *is* weak.

He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cup may not pass away from me, except I drink it, thy will be done. And he came and found them asleep again: for their eyes were heavy, neither wist they what to answer him.

And he left them, and went away again, and prayed the third time, saying the same words. Then cometh he to his disciples, the third time, and saith unto them, Sleep on now, and take *your* rest: it is enough, the hour is come; behold, the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners. Rise up, let us go; behold, he that betrayeth me is at hand.

§ 171. JESUS BETRAYED AND MADE PRISONER.

Gethsemane—Mount of Olives—Evening Introducing the Sixth Day.

Matt. 26: 47-56. Mark 14: 43-52. Luke 22: 47-53. John 18: 2-11.

And Judas also, one of the twelve, which betrayed him, knew the place: for Jesus oftentimes resorted thither with his disciples.

And immediately while he yet spake, Judas then, (having received a band *of men* and officers from the chief priests and Pharisees, and the scribes and the elders of the people,) cometh thither and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, and with

lanterns, torches and weapons. Jesus therefore, knowing all things that should come upon him, went forth, and said unto them, Whom seek ye? They answered him, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus saith unto them, I am *he*. And Judas also, which betrayed him, stood with them. As soon then as he had said unto them, I am *he*, they went backward, and fell to the ground. Then asked he them again, Whom seek ye? And they said, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus answered, I have told you that I am *he*. If therefore ye seek me, let these go their way: that the saying might be fulfilled which he spake, Of them which thou gavest me, have I lost none.

Now he that betrayed him, gave them a sign, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he; take him, hold him fast, and lead *him* away safely. And as soon as he was come, he goeth straightway to Jesus, and said, Hail, Master; and kissed him. And Jesus said unto him, Friend, wherefore art thou come? Judas, betrayest thou the Son of man with a kiss? Then came they, and laid their hands on Jesus, and took him.

When they which were about him saw what would follow, they said unto him, Lord, shall we smite with the sword?

Then Simon Peter, having a sword, drew it, and smote the high priest's servant, and cut off his right ear. The servant's name was Malchus. And Jesus answered and said, Suffer ye thus far. And he touched his ear, and healed him.

Then said Jesus unto Peter, Put up again thy sword into his place: for all they that take the sword, shall

perish with the sword. The cup which my Father hath given me, shall I not drink it? Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me more than twelve legions of angels? But how then shall the scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be?

Then Jesus in that same hour said unto the chief priests, and captains of the temple, and the elders, and to the multitudes, which were come to him, Are ye come out against a thief with swords and staves for to take me? I sat daily with you teaching in the temple, and ye laid no hold on me, ye stretched forth no hands against me: but this is your hour, and the power of darkness. But all this was done, that the scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the disciples forsook him, and fled. And there followed him a certain young man, having a linen cloth cast about *his* naked *body*; and the young men laid hold on him. And he left the linen cloth, and fled from them naked.

§ 172. CHRIST BEFORE
ANNAS.

*Jerusalem — Night of
(Preceding) the
Sixth Day.*

John 18: 12-14, 19-23.

Then the band, and the captain, and officers of the Jews took Jesus, and bound him, and led him away to Annas first, (for he was father-in-law to

§ 173. PETER'S DENIAL.

*Jerusalem — Night of
(Preceding) the
Sixth Day.*

Matt. 26: 58, 69-75.

Mark 14: 54, 66-72.

Luke 22: 55-62.

John 18: 15-18, 25-27.

And Simon Peter followed Jesus, afar off, and *so did* another disciple. That disciple was known unto the high priest, and

Caiaphas, which was the high priest that same year.) Now Caiaphas was he which gave counsel to the Jews, that it was expedient that one man should die for the people.

The high priest then asked Jesus of his disciples, and of his doctrine. Jesus answered him, I spake openly to the world; I ever taught in the synagogue, and in the temple, whither the Jews always resort; and in secret have I said nothing. Why askest thou me? ask them which heard me, what I have said unto them: behold, they know what I said. And when he had thus spoken, one of the officers which stood by, struck Jesus with the palm of his hand, saying, Answerest thou the high priest so? Jesus answered him, If I have spoken evil, bear witness of the evil: but if well, why smitest thou me?

went in with Jesus, into the palace of the high priest. But Peter stood at the door without. Then went out that other disciple which was known unto the high priest, and spake unto her that kept the door, and brought in Peter.

And the servants and officers stood there, in the midst of the hall, and made a fire of coals; (for it was cold) and they warmed themselves: and Peter stood with them, and warmed himself. And when they were set down together, Peter sat down among the servants to see the end.

And as Peter was beneath in the palace, there cometh one of the maids of the high priest: the damsel that kept the door. And when she saw Peter warming himself, she looked upon him, earnestly and said, This man was also with him; and

§ 174. CHRIST BEFORE
CAIAPHAS.

*Jerusalem — Night of
(Preceding) the
Sixth Day.*

Matt. 26 57, 59-68.

Mark 14: 53, 55-65.

Luke 22: 54, 63-65.

John 18: 24.

And they that had laid hold on Jesus, led *him* away, (now Annas had sent him bound) unto the house of Caiaphas the high priest, where with him were assembled all the chief priests, and the elders and the scribes. Now the chief priests, and elders, and all the council, sought false witness against Jesus, to put him to death; but found none: yea, though many false witnesses came, *yet* found they none. For many bare false witness against him, but their witness agreed not together. At the last came two false witnesses, and bare false witness against him, saying, We heard him

unto Peter, And thou also wast with Jesus of Nazareth, art not thou also one of this man's disciples? But he denied before *them* all, saying, Woman, I know him not, neither understand I what thou sayest. And he went out into the porch; and the cock crew.

And after a little while, when he was gone out into the porch, and stood and warmed himself, another *maid* saw him, and said, Thou art also of them; and unto them that were there, This *fellow* was also with Jesus of Nazareth. They said therefore unto him, Art not thou also *one* of his disciples? And again he denied with an oath, and said, I am not. I do not know the man.

And about the space of one hour after, one of the servants of the high priest (being *his* kinsman whose ear Peter cut off) saith,

say, I (am able to—Matt.) will destroy this temple of God that is made with hands, and within three days I will build another made without hands. But neither so did their witness agree together.

And the high priest stood up in the midst, and asked Jesus, saying, Answerest thou nothing? what *is it which* these witness against thee? But Jesus held his peace, and answered nothing. Again the high priest asked him, and said unto him, I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell us whether thou be the Christ the Son of God. Jesus saith unto him, I am: nevertheless, I say unto you, Hereafter shall ye see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven. Then the high priest rent his clothes, saying, He hath spoken blasphemy; what

Did not I see thee in the garden with him? And another confidently affirmed, saying, Of a truth this *fellow* also was with him; for he is a Galilean. And they that stood by said again to Peter, Surely thou art *one* of them: for thou art a Galilean, and thy speech bewrayeth thee. Then began he to curse and to swear, *saying*, Man, I know not what thou sayest, I know not this man of whom ye speak. And immediately, while he yet spake, the cock crew the second time.

And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter. And Peter remembered the word of the Lord, how he had said unto him, Before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice. And when he thought thereon, he went out and wept bitterly.

further need have we of

witnesses? behold, now ye have heard his blasphemy. What think ye? They answered and said, He is guilty of death; and they all condemned him.

And the men that held Jesus mocked him, and smote *him*. And some began to spit on him, and in his face, and buffeted him, and the servants did strike him with the palms of their hands. And when they had blindfolded him, they struck him on the face, and asked him, saying, Prophecy unto us thou Christ who is he that smote thee? And many other things blasphemously spake they against him.

§ 175. JESUS BEFORE CAIAPHAS AND THE SANHEDRIM—HE IS FORMALLY EXAMINED
AND CONDEMNED.

Jerusalem—Morning of the Sixth Day.

Matt. 27: 1. Mark 15: 1. Luke 22: 66-71.

And as soon as it was day, all the chief priests with the elders of the people and the scribes, and the whole council came together and held a consultation and took counsel against Jesus to put him to death, and led him into their council, saying, Art thou the Christ? tell us. And he said unto them, If I tell you, ye will not believe. And if I also ask *you*, ye will not answer me, nor let *me* go. Hereafter shall the Son of man sit on the right hand of the power of God. Then said they all, Art thou then the Son of God? And he said unto them, Ye say that I am. And they said, What need we any further witness? for we ourselves have heard of his own mouth.

§ 176. JUDAS REPENTS AND HANGS HIMSELF.

Probably the Morning of the Sixth Day.

Mark 27: 3-10. Acts 1: 18-19.

Then Judas, which had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders, saying, I have sinned in that I have betrayed the innocent blood. And they said, What *is that* to us? see thou *to that*. And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself, and falling headlong, he burst asunder in the midst and all his bowels gushed out. And it was known unto all the dwellers at Jerusalem. And the chief priests took the silver pieces, and said, It is not lawful for to put them into the treasury, because it is the price of blood. And they took counsel, and (this man—Luke, in Acts) bought with them the potter's field, to bury strangers in. Wherefore, that field is called in their proper tongue, Aceldama, that is to say, The field of blood, unto this day. Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying,

And they took the thirty pieces of silver,
 The price of him that was valued,
 Whom they of the children of Israel did value;
 And gave them for the potter's field, as the Lord
 appointed me.

§ 177. JESUS LED AWAY TO PILATE.

Jerusalem—Morning of the Sixth Day.

Matt. 27: 2 and 11-14. Mark 15: 1-5. Luke 23: 1-5. John 18: 28-38.

And when they had bound him, the whole multitude of them arose, and led him from Caiaphas unto the

hall of judgment: and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governor, and it was early, and they themselves went not into the judgment-hall, lest they should be defiled; but that they might eat the passover. Pilate then went out unto them, and said, What accusation bring ye against this man? They answered and said unto him, If he were not a malefactor, we would not have delivered him unto thee. Then said Pilate unto them, Take ye him, and judge him according to your law. The Jews therefore said unto him, It is not lawful for us to put any man to death: that the saying of Jesus might be fulfilled, which he spake, signifying what death he should die.

And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this *fellow* perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Cæsar, saying, that he himself is Christ, a King.

Then Pilate entered into the judgment-hall again, and called Jesus, and Jesus stood before the governor; and Pilate said unto him, Art thou the King of the Jews? Jesus answered him, Sayest thou this thing of thyself, or did others tell it thee of me? Pilate answered, Am I a Jew? Thine own nation, and the chief priests, have delivered thee unto me. What hast thou done? Jesus answered, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence. Pilate therefore said unto him, Art thou a king then? Jesus answered, Thou sayest that I am a king. And Pilate asked him, Art thou the King of the Jews? And Jesus said unto him, Thou sayest. To this end

was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth, heareth my voice. Pilate saith unto him, What is truth? And when he had said this, he went out again unto the Jews, and saith unto them, I find in him no fault *at all*.

And the chief priests and elders, accused him of many things: but he answered nothing. And Pilate asked him again, saying, Hearest thou not how many things they witness against thee? Answerest thou nothing? But Jesus answered him to never a word; insomuch that the governor marvelled greatly. Then said Pilate to the chief priests, and *to* the people, I find no fault in this man. And they were the more fierce, saying, He stirreth up the people, teaching throughout all Jewry, beginning from Galilee to this place.

§ 178. JESUS BEFORE HEROD.

Jerusalem—Morning of the Sixth Day.

Luke 23: 6-12.

When Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked whether the man were a Galilean. And as soon as he knew that he belonged unto Herod's jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who himself was also at Jerusalem at that time.

And when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceeding glad: for he was desirous to see him of a long *season*, because he had heard many things of him; and he hoped to have seen some miracle done by him. Then he questioned with him in many words; but he answered him nothing. And the chief priests and scribes stood and vehemently accused him. And

Herod with his men of war set him at naught, and mocked *him*, and arrayed him in a gorgeous robe, and sent him again to Pilate.

And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together; for before they were at enmity between themselves.

§ 179. JESUS AGAIN BEFORE PILATE, WHO SEEKS TO RELEASE HIM—THE JEWS DEMAND BARABBAS.

Jerusalem—Morning of the Sixth Day.

Matt. 27:15-26. Mark 15:6-15. Luke 23:13-25. John 18:39-40.

And Pilate, when he had called together the chief priests, and the rulers, and the people, said unto them, Ye have brought this man unto me, as one that perverteth the people: and behold, I, having examined *him* before you, have found no fault in this man, touching those things whereof ye accuse him. No, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him; and lo, nothing worthy of death is done unto him: I will therefore chastise him, and release *him*. For ye have a custom that I should release unto you at the passover one prisoner, whomsoever ye desire. And there was *one* notable prisoner, a robber, named Barabbas, *which lay* bound with them that had made insurrection with him, who had committed murder in the insurrection. Therefore, when the multitude were gathered together, crying aloud, they began to desire *him to do* as he had ever done unto them. Pilate said unto them, Whom will ye that I release unto you? Barabbas, or Jesus, which is called Christ? Will ye therefore that I release unto you the King of the Jews. (For he knew that the chief priests had delivered him for envy.)

When he was set down on the judgment-seat, his wife sent unto him, saying, Have thou nothing to do with that just man: for I have suffered many things this day in a dream, because of him.

But the chief priests and the elders persuaded the multitude that they should ask Barabbas and destroy Jesus. And they cried out all at once, saying, Away with this *man*, and release unto us Barabbas: Pilate therefore, willing to release Jesus, answered, and said again unto them, Whether of the twain will ye that I release unto you? They said, Barabbas. Pilate saith unto them, What will ye then that I shall do with Jesus, which is called Christ? whom ye call the King of the Jews? And they all cried out again, Crucify him. Let him be crucified. Then Pilate said unto them, the third time, Why, what evil hath he done? I have found no cause of death in him; I will therefore chastise him, and let *him* go. And they were instant with loud voices, and cried out the more exceedingly, Crucify him. And the voices of them and of the chief priests prevailed.

When Pilate saw that he could prevail nothing, but *that* rather a tumult was made, he took water, and washed *his* hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this just person: see ye *to it*. Then answered all the people, and said, His blood *be* on us, and on our children.

And *so* Pilate, willing to content the people, gave sentence that it should be as they required. And he released unto them Barabbas that for sedition and murder was cast into prison, whom they had desired.

§ 180. JESUS SCOURGED AND MOCKED—PILATE AGAIN
STRIVES TO RELEASE HIM—AND FINALLY DE-
LIVERS HIM FOR CRUCIFIXION.

Jerusalem—Morning of the Sixth Day.

Matt. 27: 26-30. Mark 15: 15-19. Luke 23: 25. John 19: 1-16.

Then Pilate therefore took Jesus, and scourged *him*. And the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the common hall, called Pretorium; and they called together the whole band; and they stripped him, and put on him a purple (scarlet—Matt.) robe.

And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put *it* upon his head, and a reed in his right hand: and they bowed the knee before him, and worshipping mocked him, saying, Hail, King of the Jews! And they smote him with their hands. And they spit upon him, and took the reed, and smote him on the head.

Pilate therefore went forth again, and saith unto them, Behold, I bring him forth to you, that ye may know that I find no fault in him. Then came Jesus forth, wearing the crown of thorns, and the purple robe. And *Pilate* saith unto them, Behold the man! When the chief priests therefore and officers saw him, they cried out, saying, Crucify *him*, crucify *him*. Pilate saith unto them, Take ye him, and crucify *him*: for I find no fault in him. The Jews answered him, We have a law, and by our law he ought to die, because he made himself the Son of God.

When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he was the more afraid; and went again into the judgment-hall, and saith unto Jesus, Whence art thou? But Jesus gave him no answer. Then saith Pilate unto him, Speakest thou not unto me? knowest thou not, that I

have power to crucify thee, and have power to release thee? Jesus answered, Thou couldest have no power *at all* against me, except it were given thee from above: therefore he that delivered me unto thee hath the greater sin. And from thenceforth Pilate sought to release him: but the Jews cried out, saying, If thou let this man go, thou art not Cæsar's friend. Whosoever maketh himself a king, speaketh against Cæsar.

When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he brought Jesus forth, and sat down in the judgment-seat, in a place that is called the Pavement, but in the Hebrew, Gabbatha. And it was the preparation of the pass-over, and about the sixth hour: and he saith unto the Jews, Behold your King! But they cried out, Away with *him*, away with *him*, crucify him. Pilate saith unto them, Shall I crucify your King? The chief priests answered, We have no king but Cæsar. And when he had scourged Jesus, he delivered *him* unto them to be crucified.

§ 181. JESUS LED TO CRUCIFIXION.

Sixth Day of the Week.

Matt. 27: 31-34. Mark 15: 20-23. Luke 23: 26-33. John 19: 16-17.

And after that they had mocked him, they took off the purple robe from him, and put his own clothes on him, and led him out to crucify him. And he went forth bearing his cross. And as they came out, they found and laid hold upon one Simon a Cyrenian, who passed by, coming out of the country, the father of Alexander and Rufus, and on him they laid the cross, and compelled him to bear *it* after Jesus. And there followed him a great company of people, and of

women, which also bewailed and lamented him. But Jesus turning unto them, said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for yourselves, and for your children. For behold, the days are coming, in the which they shall say, Blessed *are* the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and the paps which never gave suck. Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us; and to the hills, Cover us. For if they do these things in a green tree, what shall be done in the dry? And there were also two others, malefactors, led with him to be put to death.

And they come to the place called Calvary, which is called in the Hebrew, Golgotha: that is, being interpreted, The place of a skull. And they gave him to drink, wine mingled with myrrh, (vinegar mingled with gall—Matt.) and when he had tasted *thereof*, he would not drink.

§ 182. THE CRUCIFIXION.

Jerusalem—Sixth Day of the Week.

Matt. 27: 35-38. Mark 15: 24-28. Luke 23: 33, 34, 38. John 19: 18-24.

There they crucified him, and with him they crucified two thieves and malefactors; one on the right hand, and the other on the left, and Jesus in the midst. And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith,

And he was numbered with the transgressors.

And it was the third hour. Then said Jesus, Father, forgive them: for they know not what they do.

Then the soldiers, when they had crucified Jesus, took his garments, and made four parts, to every soldier a part; and also *his* coat: now the coat was without seam, woven from the top throughout. They

said therefore among themselves, Let us not rend it, but cast lots for it whose it shall be: that the scripture might be fulfilled, which saith,

They parted my raiment among them,
And for my vesture they did cast lots.

These things therefore the soldiers did. And sitting down, they watched him there: and set up over his head his accusation which Pilate wrote and put on the cross. And the writing was, JESUS OF NAZARETH, THE KING OF THE JEWS. This title then read many of the Jews: for the place where Jesus was crucified was nigh to the city: and it was written in Hebrew, *and* Greek, *and* Latin. Then said the chief priests of the Jews to Pilate, Write not, The King of the Jews; but that he said, I am King of the Jews. Pilate answered, What I have written, I have written.

§ 183. JESUS MOCKED ON THE CROSS—HE COMMENDS HIS MOTHER TO JOHN.

Jerusalem—Sixth Day of the Week.

Matt. 27: 39-44. Mark 15: 29-32. Luke 23: 35-37 and 39-43. John 19: 25-27.

And they that passed by, railed on him, wagging their heads, and saying, Ah, thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest *it* in three days, save thyself. If thou be the Son of God, come down from the cross. Likewise also the chief priests mocking said among themselves, with the scribes and elders, He saved others; himself he cannot save. If he be the King of Israel, let him now come down from the cross, that we may see him, and we will believe him. He trusted in

God; let him deliver him now if he will have him: for he said, I am the Son of God. And the people stood beholding. And the rulers also with them derided him, saying, He saved others, let him save himself, if he be Christ, the chosen of God. And the soldiers also mocked him, coming to him, and offering him vinegar, and saying, If thou be the King of the Jews, save thyself. And one of the malefactors, which were crucified with him railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thyself and us. But the other answering, rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation? And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss. And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom. And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To-day shalt thou be with me in paradise.

Now there stood by the cross of Jesus, his mother, and his mother's sister, Mary the *wife* of Cleophas, and Mary Magdalene. When Jesus therefore saw his mother, and the disciple standing by whom he loved, he saith unto his mother, Woman, behold thy son! Then saith he to the disciple, Behold thy mother! And from that hour that disciple took her unto his own *home*.

§ 184. JESUS EXPIRES ON THE CROSS—WONDERFUL PHENOMENA.

Jerusalem—Sixth Day of the Week.

Matt. 27:45-56. Mark 15:33-41. Luke 23:44-49. John 19:28-30.

And when the sixth hour was come, there was dark-

ness over all the land until the ninth hour. And the sun was darkened, and about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? which is, being interpreted, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? And some of them that stood by, when they heard *it*, said, Behold, he calleth Elias.

After this, Jesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, that the scripture might be fulfilled, saith, I thirst. Now there was set a vessel full of vinegar: and they filled a sponge with vinegar, and put *it* upon (hyssop—John) a reed, and put *it* to his mouth to drink. The rest said, Let be, let us see whether Elias will come to save him. When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said, It is finished.

And when Jesus had cried again with a loud voice, he said, Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit: and having said thus, he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost.

And behold, the vail of the temple was rent in twain in the midst from the top to the bottom: and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent; and the graves were opened, and many bodies of the saints which slept, arose, and came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many. Now when the centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jesus, saw the earthquake, and those things that were done, they feared greatly, and glorified God, saying, Truly this man was the Son of God. And all the people that came together to that sight, beholding the things which were done, smote their breasts and returned. And all his acquaintance stood afar off beholding these things, and many women

were there which followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering unto him: among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James the less, and of Joses, and Salome, the mother of Zebedee's children. Who also, when he was in Galilee, followed him, and ministered unto him; and many other women which came up with him unto Jerusalem.

§ 185. THE BODY OF JESUS TAKEN DOWN FROM THE CROSS AND BURIED.

Jerusalem—Sixth Day of the Week.

Matt. 27: 57-61. Mark 15: 42-47. Luke 23: 50-56. John 19: 31-42.

The Jews therefore because it was the preparation, (that is the day before the sabbath,) that the bodies should not remain upon the cross on the sabbath-day, (for that sabbath-day was an high day,) besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and *that* they might be taken away. Then came the soldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other which was crucified with him. But when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs: but one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came thereout blood and water. And he that saw *it*, bare record, and his record is true: and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might believe. For these things were done, that the scripture should be fulfilled,

A bone of him shall not be broken.

And again another scripture saith,

They shall look on him whom they pierced.

And now, when the even was come, there came a

rich man, Joseph of Arimathea, a city of the Jews; (being a disciple of Jesus, but secretly for fear of the Jews,) an honorable counsellor, a good man, and a just: (the same had not consented to the counsel and deed of them :) who also himself waited for the kingdom of God, and went in boldly unto Pilate, and besought him that he might take away the body of Jesus: and Pilate marvelled if he were already dead: and calling *unto him* the centurion, he asked him whether he had been any while dead. And when he knew *it* of the centurion, he gave him leave, and commanded the body to be delivered to Joseph.

He came therefore and took down the body of Jesus. And there came also Nicodemus (which at the first came to Jesus by night) and brought a mixture of myrrh and aloes, about an hundred pound *weight*. Then took they the body of Jesus, and wound it in fine, clean linen clothes which Joseph bought with the spices, as the manner of the Jews is to bury. And Joseph laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock; wherein never man before was laid. And the sepulchre was in the garden nigh at hand to the place where he was crucified. There laid they Jesus therefore, because that day was the Jews' preparation, and the sabbath drew on. And he rolled a great stone to the door of the sepulchre, and departed.

And there was Mary Magdalene, and Mary *the mother* of Joses sitting over against the sepulchre. And the women also, which came with him from Galilee, followed after, and beheld the sepulchre, and how his body was laid. And they returned. and pre-

pared spices and ointments; and rested the sabbath-day according to the commandment.

§ 186. THE SEPULCHRE SEALED AND GUARDED.

Jerusalem—Seventh Day of the Week.

Matt. 27: 62-66.

Now the next day that followed the day of the preparation, the chief priests and Pharisees came together unto Pilate, saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet alive, After three days I will rise again. Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest his disciples come by night, and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead: so the last error shall be worse than the first. Pilate said unto them, Ye have a watch: go your way, make *it* as sure as ye can. So they went and made the sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch.

CHAPTER X.

CHRIST'S RESURRECTION—HIS SUBSEQUENT APPEARANCES AND ASCENSION.

Time, Forty Days.

§ 187. THE RESURRECTION.

Jerusalem—First Day of the Week.

Matt. 28: 2-4.

And behold, there was a great earthquake: for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it. His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow. And for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead *men*.

§ 188. THE WOMEN VISIT THE SEPULCHRE—MARY MAGDALENE HASTILY RETURNS.

Jerusalem—First Day of the Week.

Matt. 28: 1. Mark 16: 1-4. Luke 24: 1-2. John 20: 1-2.

And when the sabbath was past, very early in the morning, when it was yet dark, as it began to dawn toward the first *day* of the week, there came unto the sepulchre, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the *mother* of

James, and Salome, and certain *others* with them to see the sepulchre, bringing the sweet spices which they had bought and prepared, that they might come and anoint him.

And they said among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the door of the sepulchre? (And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away,) for it was very great.

And Mary Magdalene when she seeth the stone taken away from the sepulchre runneth, and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple whom Jesus loved, and saith unto them, They have taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we know not where they have laid him.

§ 189. THE WOMEN ENTER THE SEPULCHRE AND
SEE THE ANGELS.

Jerusalem—First Day of the Week.

Matt. 28: 5-8. Mark 16: 5-8. Luke 24. 3-8.

And they [the women] entered in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus. And it came to pass, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold, (they saw a young man sitting on the right side—Mark) two men stood by them clothed in long white shining garments. And as they were afraid, and bowed down *their* faces to the earth, the angel answered and said unto the women, Fear not ye: for I know that ye seek Jesus of Nazareth, which was crucified. Why seek ye the living among the dead? He is not here, but is risen, as he said. Remember how he spake unto you when he was yet in Galilee, saying, The Son of man must be delivered into the

hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again. Come, see the place where the Lord lay. And go, quickly, and tell his disciples, and Peter, that he is risen from the dead, and behold, he goeth before you into Galilee; there shall ye see him, as he said unto you. Lo, I have told you. And they remembered his words.

And they went out quickly, and fled from the sepulchre; for they trembled, and were amazed, with fear and great joy; neither said they any thing to any *man*; for they were afraid, and did run to bring his disciples word.

§ 190. PETER AND JOHN AT THE SEPULCHRE.

Jerusalem—First Day of the Week.

Luke 24: 12. John 20: 3-10.

Peter therefore went forth, and that other disciple, and came to the sepulchre. So they ran both together: and the other disciple did outrun Peter, and came first to the sepulchre. And he stooping down, *and looking in*, saw the linen clothes lying; yet went he not in. Then cometh Simon Peter following him, and went into the sepulchre, and seeth the linen clothes lie; and the napkin that was about his head, not lying with the linen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by itself. Then went in also that other disciple which came first to the sepulchre, and he saw, and believed. For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he must rise again from the dead. Then the disciples departed and went away again unto their own home; Peter wondering in himself at that which was come to pass.

§ 191. JESUS APPEARS TO MARY MAGDALENE.

Jerusalem—First Day of the Week.

Mark 16: 9. John 20: 11-17.

But Mary stood without at the sepulchre weeping: and as she wept she stooped down *and looked* into the sepulchre, and seeth two angels in white, sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had lain. And they say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She saith unto them, Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him. And when she had thus said, she turned herself back, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus. Jesus saith unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou? She, supposing him to be the gardener, saith unto him, Sir, if thou have borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away. Jesus saith unto her, Mary. She turned herself, and saith unto him, Rabboni, which is to say, Master. Jesus saith unto her, Touch me not: for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father and your Father, and *to* my God and your God. Thus when *Jesus* was risen, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom he had cast seven devils.

§ 192. JESUS MEETS THE OTHER WOMEN.

Jerusalem—First Day of the Week.

Matt. 28: 9-10.

And as they [the women] went to tell his disciples, behold, Jesus met them, saying, All hail. And they

came, and held him by the feet, and worshipped him. Then said Jesus unto them, Be not afraid: go tell my brethren, that they go into Galilee, and there shall they see me.

§ 193. THE WOMEN REPORT TO THE DISCIPLES THAT
THEY HAVE SEEN JESUS.

Jerusalem—Seventh Day of the Week.

Mark 16: 10-11. Luke 24: 9-11. John 20: 18.

And Joanna, and Mary *the mother* of James, and other *women that were* with them, returned from the sepulchre, and told all these things unto the eleven, and to all the rest. And their words seemed to them as idle tales, and they believed them not.

Mary Magdalene came and told the disciples that had been with him, as they mourned and wept, that she had seen the Lord, and *that* he had spoken these things unto her. And they, when they had heard that he was alive, and had been seen of her, believed not.

§ 194. REPORT OF THE WATCH.

Jerusalem—First Day of the Week.

Matt. 28: 11-15.

Now when they were going, behold some of the watch came into the city, and shewed unto the chief priests all the things that were done. And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the soldiers, saying, Say ye, His disciples came by night, and stole him *away* while we slept. And if this come to the governor's ears, we will persuade him, and secure you. So they

took the money, and did as they were taught: and this saying is commonly reported among the Jews until this day.

§ 195. JESUS IS SEEN BY PETER AT JERUSALEM;
THEN BY TWO DISCIPLES ON THE
WAY TO EMMAUS.

First Day of the Week.

Mark 16: 12-13. Luke 24: 13-35. 1 Cor. 15: 5.

And he was seen of Cephas. And behold, two of them went that same day into the country, to a village called Emmaus, which was from Jerusalem *about* threescore furlongs. And they talked together of all these things which had happened. And it came to pass, that, as they walked, while they communed *together*, and reasoned, Jesus himself, in another form, drew near and went with them. But their eyes were holden, that they should not know him. And he said unto them, What manner of communications *are* these that ye have one to another, as ye walk, and are sad? And the one of them, whose name was Cleopas, answering, said unto him, Art thou only a stranger in Jerusalem, and hast not known the things which are come to pass there in these days? And he said unto them, What things? And they said unto him, Concerning Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God, and all the people: and how the chief priests and our rulers delivered him to be condemned to death, and have crucified him. But we trusted that it had been he which should have redeemed Israel: and besides all this, to-day is the third day since these things were

done. Yea, and certain women also of our company made us astonished, which were early at the sepulchre. And when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, which said that he was alive. And certain of them which were with us, went to the sepulchre, and found *it* even so as the women had said: but him they saw not.

Then he said unto them, O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken! Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory? And beginning at Moses, and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself.

And they drew nigh unto the village whither they went: and he made as though he would have gone further. But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us: for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent. And he went in to tarry with them. And it came to pass, as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed *it*, and brake, and gave to them. And their eyes were opened, and they knew him: and he vanished out of their sight. And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures?

And they rose up the same hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them, saying, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon. And they told unto the residue what things *were done* in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread: neither believed they them.

§ 196. JESUS APPEARS TO THE APOSTLES; THOMAS
BEING ABSENT.

*Jerusalem—Evening Following the First Day of
the Week.*

Mark 16: 14. Luke 24: 36-49. John 20: 19-25. 1 Cor. 15: 5.

And as they thus spake, the same day at evening, being the first *day* of the week, as they sit at meat, when the doors were shut where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, came Jesus and stood in the midst, and saith unto them, Peace *be* unto you. But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they had seen a spirit. And he upbraided them with their unbelief, and hardness of heart, because they believed not them which had seen him after he was risen. And he said unto them, Why are ye troubled? and why do thoughts arise in your hearts? Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me, and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have. And when he had thus spoken, he shewed them *his* hands and *his* feet and *his* side. And while they yet believed not for joy, and wondered, he said unto them, Have ye here any meat? And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish, and of an honeycomb. And he took *it*, and did eat before them. And he said unto them, These *are* the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled which were written in the law of Moses, and *in* the prophets, and *in* the psalms, concerning me. Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures, and said unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behooved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third

day: and that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. And ye are witnesses of these things.

And behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high. Then were the disciples glad when they saw the Lord. Then said Jesus to them again, Peace *be* unto you: as *my* Father hath sent me, even so send I you. And when he had said this, he breathed on *them*, and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghost. Whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; *and* whose soever *sins* ye retain, they are retained.

But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came. The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord. But he said unto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not believe.

§ 197. EIGHT DAYS LATER JESUS AGAIN APPEARS TO THE APOSTLES, THOMAS BEING PRESENT.

Jerusalem.

John 20:26-29.

And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them: *then* came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace *be* unto you. Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust *it* into my side; and be not faithless, but believing. And Thomas answered and said unto

him, My Lord and my God. Jesus saith unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed *are* they that have not seen, and *yet* have believed.

§ 198. JESUS APPEARS TO SEVEN DISCIPLES AT THE
SEA OF GALILEE.

Matt. 28: 16. John 21: 1-23.

Then the eleven disciples went away into Galilee. After these things Jesus shewed himself again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias: and on this wise shewed he *himself*. There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the *sons* of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples. Simon Peter saith unto them, I go a fishing. They say unto him, We also go with thee. They went forth, and entered into a ship immediately; and that night they caught nothing.

But when the morning was now come, Jesus stood on the shore; but the disciples knew not that it was Jesus. Then Jesus saith unto them, Children, have ye any meat? They answered him, No. And he said unto them, Cast the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall find. They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes. Therefore that disciple whom Jesus loved said unto Peter, It is the Lord. Now when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girt *his* fisher's coat *unto him*, (for he was naked) and did cast himself into the sea. And the other disciples came in a little ship (for they were not far from land, but as it were two hundred cubits) dragging the net with fishes.

As soon then as they were come to land, they saw a fire of coals there, and fish laid thereon, and bread. Jesus saith unto them, Bring of the fish which ye have now caught. Simon Peter went up, and drew the net to land full of great fishes, an hundred and fifty and three: and for all there were so many, yet was not the net broken. Jesus saith unto them, Come *and* dine. And none of the disciples durst ask him, Who art thou? knowing that it was the Lord. Jesus then cometh, and taketh bread, and giveth them, and fish likewise. This is now the third time that Jesus shewed himself to his disciples, after that he was risen from the dead.

So when they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon Peter, Simon *son* of Jonas, lovest thou me more than these? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord: thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my lambs. He saith to him again the second time, Simon *son* of Jonas, lovest thou me? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord: thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my sheep. He saith unto him the third time, Simon *son* of Jonas, lovest thou me? Peter was grieved because he said unto him the third time, Lovest thou me? And he said unto him, Lord, thou knowest all things; thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus saith unto him, Feed my sheep. Verily, verily, I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdedst thyself, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry *thee* whither thou wouldest not. This spake he, signifying by what death he should glorify God. And when he

had spoken this, he saith unto him, Follow me.

Then Peter, turning about, seeth the disciple whom Jesus loved, following; (which also leaned on his breast at supper, and said, Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee?) Peter seeing him, saith to Jesus, Lord, and what *shall* this man *do*? Jesus saith unto him, If I will that he tarry till I come, what *is that* to thee? Follow thou me. Then went this saying abroad among the brethren, that that disciple should not die: yet Jesus said not unto him, He shall not die; but, If I will that he tarry till I come, what *is that* to thee?

§ 199. JESUS MEETS THE DISCIPLES AND ABOVE
FIVE HUNDRED BRETHREN ON A MOUNTAIN.

Galilee.

Matt. 28: 16-20. Mark 16: 15-18. 1 Cor. 15: 6.

Then after that the eleven disciples went into a mountain where Jesus had appointed them, and he was seen of above five hundred brethren at once; of whom the greater part remain unto this present, but some are fallen asleep. And when they saw him, they worshipped him: but some doubted. And Jesus came, and spake to them, saying, All power is given me in heaven and in earth. And he said unto the disciples, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. He that believeth and is baptized, shall be saved; but he that believeth not, shall be damned. And these signs shall follow them that believe: In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; they shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall

not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover. Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, bahtizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost; teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you; and lo I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen.

§ 200. JESUS IS SEEN OF JAMES; THEN OF ALL THE APOSTLES.

Jerusalem.

Acts 1: 3-8. 1 Cor. 15: 7.

After that, he was seen of James; then of all the apostles. To whom also he shewed himself alive after his passion, by many infallible proofs, being seen of them forty days, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God: and being assembled together with *them*, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which, *sait he*, ye have heard of me. For John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost not many days hence. When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel? And he said unto them, It is not for you to know the times or the seasons which the Father hath put in his own power. But ye shall receive power after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me, both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.

§ 201. THE ASCENSION.

Bethany.

Mark 16: 19-20. Luke 24: 50-53. Acts 1: 9-12.

So then, after the Lord had spoken unto them, these things, he led them out as far as to Bethany: and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them. And it came to pass, while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and while they beheld, he was taken up; and a cloud received him out of their sight, and he was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God. And while they looked steadfastly toward heaven as he went up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel; which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven. And they worshipped him, with great joy: and returned unto Jerusalem, from the mount called Olivet, which is from Jerusalem a sabbath-day's journey. And were continually in the temple, praising and blessing God. Amen. And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with *them*, and confirming the word with signs following. Amen.

§ 202. CONCLUSION OF JOHN'S GOSPEL.

John 20: 30-31, 21: 24-25.

And many other signs truly did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book. But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through his name.

This is the disciple which testifieth of these things,

and wrote these things: and we know that his testimony is true. And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written. Amen.

THE END.

H 152 82



Deacidified using the Bookkeeper process
Neutralizing agent: Magnesium Oxide
Treatment Date: July 2005

Preservation Technologies
A WORLD LEADER IN PAPER PRESERVATION

111 Thomson Park Drive
Cranberry Township, PA 16066
(724) 779-2111



MAY 82

N. MANCHESTER,
INDIANA 46962



LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 014 226 308 7

